Cor Regis inſcrutabile
John Payne ſculpſit.

Cor Regis inſcrutabile
John Payne ſculpſit.

THE HISTORIE OF THE RAIGNE OF KING HENRY *The Seuenth.*

Written
By the Right Honourable,
FRANCIS,
Lord *Verulam*, Viſcount
S^t. *Alban.*

LONDON,
Printed by *W. Stansby* for *Matthew Lownes*, and *William Barret.*

1622.

*62-22781

TO THE MOST ILLVSTRIOVS AND MOST EXCELLENT PRINCE,

CHARLES,

Prince of *Wales*, Duke of *Cornwall*, Earle of *Cheſter*, &c.

It may Pleaſe Your Highneſſe,

IN part of my acknowledgment to *Your Highneſſe*, I haue endeauoured to doe *Honour* to the *Memorie* of the laſt *King* of *England*, that was *Anceſtour* to the *King* your *Father*, and *Your ſelfe*; and was that *King* to whom both *Vnions* may in a ſort

ſort referre: That of the *Roſes* beeing in him Conſummate, and that of the *Kingdomes* by him begunne. Beſides, his *Times* deſerue it. For hee was a *Wiſe Man*, and an *Excellent King*; and yet the *Times* were rough, and full of Mutations, and rare Accidents. And it is with *Times*, as it is with *Wayes*. Some are more *Up-hill* and *Downhill*, and ſome are more *Flat* and *Plaine*; and the *One* is better for the *Liuer*, and the *Other* for the *Writer*. I haue not flattered him, but tooke him to life as well as I could, ſitting ſo farre of, and hauing no better light. It is true, *Your Highneſſe* hath a *Liuing Patterne*, *Incomparable*, of the *King* your *Father*. But it is not amiſſe for *You* alſo to ſee one of theſe Ancient Pieces. GOD preſerue *Your Highneſſe*.

Your Highneſſes moſt humble and

deuoted Seruant,

Francis S^t. *Alban*.

THE HISTORIE OF THE RAIGNE OF KING HENRY *the Seuenth.*

AFter that RICHARD the third of that name, King in fact onely, but Tyrant both in Title and Regiment, and ſo commonly termed and reputed in all times ſince, was by the *Diuine Reuenge*, fauouring the deſigne of an Exilde-man, ouerthrowne and ſlaine at *Boſworth*-field: There ſucceeded in the Kingdome the Earle of *Richmond*, thence-forth ſtiled HENRY the Seuenth. The King immediately after the Victorie, as one that had beene bred vnder a deuout Mother, and was in his nature, a great Obſeruer of religious formes, cauſed *Te Deum laudamus* to be ſolemnely ſung in the preſence of the whole Armie vpon the place, and was himſelfe with generall applauſe, and great Cries of Ioy, in a kind of *Militar Election*, or *Recognition*, ſaluted King. Meane-while the body

of RICHARD after many indignities and reproches (the *Dirigies* and *Obſequies* of the common people towards *Tyrants*) was obſcurely buried. For though the King of his nobleneſſe gaue charge vnto the *Friers* of *Leiceſter* to ſee an honourable interrment to be giuen to it, yet the *Religious People* themſelues (being not free from the humours of the *Vulgar*) neglected it; wherein neuertheleſſe they did not then incurre any mans blame or cenſure. No man thinking any ignominie or contumely vnworthy of him, that had beene the Executioner of King HENRY the Sixth (that innocent Prince) with his owne hands; the Contriuer of the death of the Duke of *Clarence*, his Brother; the Murderer of his two *Nephewes* (one of them his lawfull King in the Preſent, and the other in the Future, fayling of him) and vehemently ſuſpected to haue beene the Impoiſoner of his Wife, thereby to make vacant his Bed, for a Marriage within the *Degrees forbidden*. And although he were a Prince in Militar vertue approued, jealous of the honour of the *Engliſh Nation*, and likewiſe a good *Law-maker*, for the eaſe and ſolace of the common people: yet his Cruelties and Parricides in the opinion of all men, weighed downe his Vertues and Merits; and in the opinion of wiſe men, euen thoſe Vertues themſelues were conceiued to be rather fained, and *Affected* things to ſerue his Ambition, then true *Qualities* ingenerate in his Iudgement or Nature. And therefore it was noted by men of great vnderſtanding (who ſeeing his after Acts, looked backe vpon his former Proceedings) that euen in the time of King EDWARD his Brother, he was not without ſecret *Traines* and *Mines* to turne Enuie and Hatred vpon his Brothers Gouernement; as hauing an Expectation and a kind of Diuination, that the King, by reaſon of his many diſorders, could not be of long life, but was like to leaue his

his Sonnes of tender yeares; and then hee knew well, how easie a step it was, from the place of a *Protector*, and first *Prince* of the *Bloud*, to the Crowne. And that out of this deepe roote of Ambition it sprang, that aswell at the Treatie of peace that passed betweene EDWARD the Fourth, and LEWIS the Eleuenth of *France*, concluded by Enteruiew of both Kings at *Piqueny*, as vpon all other Occasions, RICHARD then Duke of *Gloceſter*, stood euer vpon the side of Honour, raising his owne Reputation to the disaduantage of the King his Brother, and drawing the eyes of all (especially of the *Nobles* and *Souldiours*) vpon himselfe; as if the King by his voluptuous life and meane marriage, were become effeminate and lesse sensible of Honour, and Reason of State, then was fit for a King. And as for the Politique and wholesome *Lawes* which were enacted in his time, they were interpreted to be but the Brocage of an *Vsurper*, thereby to woo, and winne the hearts of the people, as being conscious to himselfe that the true obligations of *Soueraigntie* in him failed, and were wanting. But King HENRY in the very entrance of his Reigne, and the instant of time, when the Kingdome was cast into his Armes, met with a Point of great difficultie, and knotty to solue, able to trouble and confound the wisest King in the newnesse of his Estate; and so much the more, because it could not endure a *Deliberation*, but must be at once deliberated and determined. There were fallen to his lot, and concurrent in his Person, three seuerall *Titles* to the Imperiall Crowne. The first, the Title of the Lady *Elizabeth*, with whom, by precedent Pact with the Partie that brought him in, he was to marry. The second, the ancient and long disputed Title (both by *Plea*, and *Armes*) of the House of *Lancaster*, to which he was Inheritour in his owne Person. The third, the

Title of the *Sword* or *Conqueſt*, for that he came in by victorie of Battaile, and that the King in poſſeſſion was ſlaine in the Field. The firſt of theſe was faireſt, and moſt like to giue contentment to the People, who by two and twentie yeares Reigne of King EDWARD the Fourth, had beene fully made capable of the clearneſſe of the Title of the *White-Roſe* or Houſe of *Yorke*; and by the milde and plauſible Reigne of the ſame King toward his Latter time, were become affectionate to that *Line*. But then it lay plaine before his Eyes, that if he relied vpon that *Title*, he could be but a *King* at *Curteſie*, and haue rather a *Matrimoniall* then a *Regall* power: the right remayning in his *Queene*, vpon whoſe deceaſe, either with Iſſue, or without Iſſue, he was to giue place, and bee remoued. And though hee ſhould obtaine by *Parliament* to bee continued, yet hee knew there was a very great difference betweene a King that holdeth his Crowne by a ciuill Act of *Eſtates*, and one that holdeth it originally by the Law of *Nature*, and deſcent of Bloud. Neither wanted there euen at that time ſecret Rumours and whiſperings (which afterwards gathered ſtrength and turned to great troubles) that the two young Sonnes of King EDWARD the Fourth, or one of them (which were ſaid to be deſtroyed in the Tower) were not indeed murthered but conueyed ſecretly away, and were yet liuing: which if it had beene true, had preuented the Title of the Lady ELIZABETH. On the other ſide, if he ſtood vpon his owne Title of the Houſe of *Lancaſter*, inherent in his Perſon; hee knew it was a Title condemned by *Parliament*, and generally preiudged in the common opinion of the Realme, and that it tended directly to the diſinheriſon of the Line of *Yorke*, held then the indubiate Heires of the Crowne. So that if he ſhould haue no Iſſue by the Lady ELIZABETH, which ſhould bee Deſcen-

Deſcendents of the *Double-Line*, when the ancient flames of Diſcord and inteſtine Warres vpon the Competition of both Houſes, would againe returne and reuiue.

As for *Conqueſt* notwithſtanding, Sir WILLIAM STANLEY, after ſome acclamations of the Souldiers in the Field, had put a Crowne of ornament (which RICHARD wore in the Battaile, and was found amongſt the Spoiles) vpon King HENRIES head, as if there were his chiefe Title; yet he remembred well vpon what Conditions and Agreements hee was brought in, and that to claime as *Conquerour*, was to put aſwell his owne Partie, as the reſt, into Terror and Feare; as that which gaue him power of diſanulling of Lawes, and diſpoſing of Mens Fortunes and Eſtates, and the like points of abſolute power, being in themſelues ſo harſh and odious, as that WILLIAM himſelfe, commonly called the *Conquerour*, howſoeuer he vſed and exerciſed the power of a *Conquerour* to reward his *Normans*, yet he forbare to vſe that Claime in the beginning, but mixed it with a Titularie pretence grounded vpon the *Will* and deſignation of EDWARD the *Confeſſor*. But the King out of the greatneſſe of his owne minde, preſently caſt the Die, and the inconueniences appearing vnto him on all parts; and knowing there could not be any *Interreigne* or ſuſpenſion of Title; and preferring his affection to his own Line and Bloud, and liking that Title beſt which made him independent; and being in his Nature and conſtitution of minde not very apprehenſiue or forecaſting of future Euents a-farre off, but an Intertainer of Fortune by the Day; reſolued to reſt vpon the Title of *Lancaſter* as the *Maine*, and to vſe the other two, that of *Marriage*, and that of *Battaile*, but as *Supporters*, the one to appeaſe ſecret Diſcontents, and the other to beate downe open murmur and diſpute: not for-

forgetting that the ſame Title of *Lancaſter* had formerly maintained a poſſeſſion of three Diſcents in the Crowne, and might haue proued a *Perpetuitie*, had it not ended in the weakeneſſe and inabilitie of the laſt Prince. Whereupon the King preſently that very day, being the two and twentieth of Auguſt, aſſumed the Stile of King in his owne name, without mention of the Lady ELIZABETH at all, or any relation thereunto. In which courſe hee euer after perſiſted, which did ſpin him a threed of many ſeditions and troubles. The King full of theſe thoughts, before his departure from *Leiceſter*, diſpatched Sir ROBERT WILLOVGHBY to the Caſtle of *Sheriffe-Hutton* in *Yorkeſhire*, where were kept in ſafe cuſtodie by King RICHARDS commandement, both the Lady ELIZABETH daughter of King EDWARD, and EDWARD PLANTAGENET, Sonne and Heire to GEORGE Duke of *Clarence*. This EDWARD was by the Kings warrant deliuered from the Conſtable of the Caſtle to the hand of Sir ROBERT WILLOVGHBY; and by him with all ſafetie and diligence conueyed to the Tower of *London*, where he was ſhut vp *Cloſe-Priſoner*. Which Act of the Kings (being an Act meerely of Policie and Power) proceeded not ſo much from any apprehenſion he had of Doctor *Shawes* tale at *Paules Croſſe*, for the baſtarding of EDWARD the Fourths Iſſues, in which caſe this young Gentleman was to ſucceed (for that Fable was euer exploded) but vpon a ſetled diſpoſition to depreſſe all Eminent perſons of the Line of *Yorke*. Wherein ſtill the King out of ſtrength of Will, or weakneſſe of Iudgement did vſe to ſhew a little more of the *Partie*, then of the *King*.

For the Lady ELIZABETH ſhee receiued alſo a direction to repaire with all conuenient ſpeede to *London*, and there to remaine with the Queene *Dowager*

wager her Mother; which accordingly ſhee ſoone after did, accompanied with many *Noble-men* and *Ladies* of Honour. In the meane ſeaſon the King ſet forwards by eaſie iourneys to the Citie of *London*, receiuing the Acclamations and Applauſes of the People as he went, which indeed were true and vnfained, as might well appeare in the very Demonſtrations and Fulneſſe of the Crie. For they thought generally that hee was a *Prince* as ordayned and ſent downe from Heauen, to vnite and put to an end the long diſſentions of the two Houſes; which although they had had in the times of HENRY the Fourth, HENRY the Fifth, and a part of HENRY the Sixth on the one ſide, and the times of EDWARD the Fourth on the other, *Lucide-interuals* and happy Pauſes; yet they did euer hang ouer the *Kingdome*, readie to breake forth into new Perturbations and Calamities. And as his victorie gaue him the *Knee*, ſo his purpoſe of marriage with the Lady ELIZABETH, gaue him the *Heart*; ſo that both *Knee* and *Heart* did truely bow before him.

Hee on the other ſide with great wiſedome (not ignorant of the affections and feares of the people) to diſperſe the conceit and terrour of a *Conqueſt*, had giuen order that there ſhould be nothing in his iourney like vnto a warlike March, or manner: but rather like vnto the *Progreſſe* of a King in full peace and aſſurance.

Hee entred the Citie vpon a *Saturday*, as hee had alſo obtayned the Victorie vpon a *Saturday*, which day of the Weeke firſt vpon an Obſeruation, and after vpon Memorie and Fancie, hee accounted and choſe as a day proſperous vnto him

The *Major* and *Companies* of the Citie receiued him at *Shore-ditch*: whence, with great and Honorable attendance and troups of Noble-men, and Perſons of

of Qualitie hee entred the Citie; himſelfe not being on Horſe-backe, or in any open *Chaire*, or *Throne*, but in a cloſe *Chariot*, as one that hauing beene ſomtimes an Enimie to the whole State, and a Proſcribed perſon, choſe rather to keepe State, and ſtrike a Reuerence into the people, then to fawne vpon them.

He went firſt into Saint *Paules* Church, where not meaning that the People ſhould forget too ſoone that hee came in by Battaile, hee made Offertorie of his *Standards*, and had Orizons and *Te Deum* againe ſung, and went to his Lodging prepared in the *Biſhop* of *Londons Pallace*, where he ſtayed for a time.

During his abode there, he aſſembled his *Counſell*, and other principall perſons, in preſence of whom, he did renew againe his promiſe to marrie with the *Lady* ELIZABETH. This hee did the rather, becauſe hauing at his comming out of *Britaine* giuen artificially, for ſeruing of his owne turne ſome hopes, in caſe he obtained the Kingdome, to marrie ANNE Inheritreſſe to the Duchie of *Britaine*, whom CHARLES the Eight of *France* ſoone after married; It bred ſome doubt and ſuſpicion amongſt diuers, that he was not ſincere, or at leaſt not fixed in going on with the match of *England* ſo much deſired: which Conceit alſo though it were but Talke and Diſcourſe did much afflict the poore *Lady* ELIZABETH her ſelfe. But howſoeuer he both truly intended it, and deſired alſo it ſhould be ſo beleeued, (the better to extinguiſh Enuie and Contradiction to his other purpoſes) yet was he reſolued in himſelfe not to proceed to the Conſummation thereof till his *Coronation* and a *Parliament* were paſt. The one, leaſt a ioynt Coronation of himſelfe and his *Queene* might giue any countenance of participation of Title; The other, leaſt in the intayling of the *Crowne* to himſelfe, which he hoped to obtaine by *Parliament*, the

Votes

Votes of the *Parliament* might any wayes reflect vpon her.

About this time in *Autumne*, towards the end of *September*, there began and raigned in the Citie and other parts of the Kingdome a *Diſeaſe* then new: which of the Accidents and manner thereof, they called the *Sweating-Sickneſſe*. This Diſeaſe had a ſwift courſe both in the *Sicke-Body* and in the *Time* and Period of the laſting thereof: for they that were taken with it vpon foure and twentie houres eſcaping were thought almoſt aſſured. And as to the *Time* of the malice and raigne of the Diſeaſe ere it ceaſed; It began about the one and twentieth of *September*, and cleared vp before the end of *October*, inſomuch as it was no hinderance to the Kings *Coronation* which was the laſt of *October*: nor (which was more) to the holding of the *Parliament*, which began but ſeuen dayes after. It was a *Peſtilent-Feuer*, but as it ſeemeth not ſeated in the Veynes or Humors for that there followed no *Carbuncle*, no purple or liuide Spots, or the like, the Maſſe of the Bodie being not tainted: onely a maligne *Vapour* flew to the Heart and ſeaſed the vitall *Spirits*; which ſtirred Nature to ſtriue to ſend it forth by an extreame ſweat. And it appeared by experience that this Diſeaſe was rather a Surpriſe of Nature, then obſtinate to Remedies, if it were in time looked vnto. For if the *Patient* were kept in an equall temper, both for Clothes, Fire, and Drinke, moderately warme, with temperate *Cordials*, whereby Natures worke were neither irritated by *Heat*, nor turned backe by *Cold*, hee commonly recouered. But infinite Perſons died ſodainly of it, before the manner of the Cure and attendance was knowne. It was conceiued not to bee an *Epidemicke* Diſeaſe, but to proceed from a malignitie in the conſtitution of the Aire, gathered by the prediſpoſitions

of Seaſons: and the ſpeedie ceſſation declared as much.

On SIMON and IVDES Euen the King dined with THOMAS BOVRCHIER, *Arch-biſhop* of *Canterburie*, and *Cardinall:* and from *Lambeth* went by Land ouer the Bridge to the Tower, where the morrow after hee made twelue *Knights-Bannerets*. But for *Creations* hee diſpenſed them with a ſparing hand. For notwithſtanding a Field ſo lately fought, and a *Coronation* ſo neere at hand, hee onely created three: IASPER Earle of *Pembroke* (the Kings Vncle) was created Duke of *Bedford;* THOMAS the Lord STANLEY (the Kings Father-in-law Earle of *Darbie;* and EDWARD COVRTNEY Earle of *Deuon;* though the King had then neuertheleſſe a purpoſe in himſelfe to make more in time of *Parliament;* bearing a wiſe and decent reſpect to diſtribute his *Creations*, ſome to honour his *Coronation*, and ſome his *Parliament*.

The *Coronation* followed two dayes after vpon the thirtieth day of *October* in the yeare of our Lord 1485. At which time INNOCENT the Eight was *Pope* of *Rome;* FREDERICKE the Third, *Emperour* of *Almaine;* and MAXIMILIAN his ſonne newly choſen King of the *Romans;* CHARLES the Eight, King of *France;* FERDINANDO and ISABELLA, Kings of *Spaine;* and IAMES the Third, King of *Scotland:* with all which Kings and States, the King was at that time in good peace and amitie. At which day alſo (as if the Crowne vpon his head, had put perils into his thoughts) he did inſtitute for the better ſecuritie of his perſon a Band of fiftie *Archers* vnder a *Captaine* to attend him, by the name of *Yeomen-of-his-Guard:* and yet that it might be thought to be rather a matter of *Dignitie*, after the imitation of that hee had knowne abroad, then any matter of *Diffidence* appropriate

priate to his owne Caſe, hee made it to be vnderſtood for an *Ordinance* not temporarie, but to hold in ſucceſſion for euer after.

The ſeuenth of *Nouember* the King held his *Parliament* at *Weſtminſter*, which hee had ſummoned immediately after his comming to *London*. His Ends in calling a *Parliament* (and that ſo ſpeedily) were chiefly three; *Firſt*, to procure the Crowne to bee entayled vpon himſelfe. *Next*, to haue the Attaindors of all of his Partie (which were in no ſmall number) reuerſed, and all Acts of hoſtilitie by them done in his quarrell, remitted and diſcharged: and on the other ſide to attaine by *Parliament*, the *Heads* and *Principals* of his Enemies. The *Third*, to calme and quiet the feares of the reſt of that Partie by a *Generall-Pardon*: not being ignorant in how great danger a King ſtands from his Subiects, when moſt of his Subiects are conſcious in themſelues, that they ſtand in his danger. Vnto theſe three ſpeciall Motiues of a *Parliament* was added, that hee as a prudent and moderate *Prince*, made this iudgement; that it was fit for him to haſten to let his people ſee, that hee meant to gouerne by *Law*, howſoeuer hee came in by the *Sword*: and fit alſo to reclaime them to know him for their *King*, whom they had ſo lately talked of as an *Enemie*, or *Baniſhed-man*. For that which concerned the Entayling of the *Crowne*; (more then that he was true to his owne Will, that hee would not indure any mention of the Lady ELIZABETH: no not in the nature of *Speciall-Intaile*,) he carried it otherwiſe with great wiſdome and meaſure. For he did not preſſe to haue the *Act* penned by way of *Declaration* or *Recognition* of right: as on the other ſide, he auoyded to haue it by new *Law* or *Ordinance*; but choſe rather a kind of middle-way, by way of *Eſtabliſhment*, and that vnder couert and indifferent words; *That the inheritance*

of the Crowne ſhould reſt, remaine, and abide in the King, &c. which words might equally be applied; That the Crowne ſhould continue to him: but whether as hauing former right to it, (which was doubtfull) or hauing it then in Fact and poſſeſſion (which no man denied) was left faire to interpretation eyther way. And againe for the limitation of the *Entaile*, he did not preſſe it to goe further then to himſelfe and to the *Heires* of his body, not ſpeaking of his *right Heires*; but leauing that to the Law to decide: ſo as the Entaile might ſeeme rather a perſonall fauour to him, and his children, then a totall Diſ-inheriſon to the Houſe of *Yorke*. And in this forme, was the Law drawne and paſſed. Which *Statute* hee procured to be confirmed by the *Popes Bull* the yeare following, with mention neuertheleſſe (by way of Recitall) of his other Titles; both of *Diſcent* and *Conqueſt*. So as now the wreath of *Three* was made a wreath of *Fiue*, for to the three firſt Titles of the two Houſes, or Lines, and Conqueſt, were added two more; the Authorities *Parliamentarie* and *Papall*.

The King likewiſe in the *Reuerſall* of the Attaindors of his *Partakers*, and diſcharging them of all offences incident to his ſeruice and ſuccour, had his Will: and Acts did paſſe accordingly. In the paſſage whereof, exception was taken to diuers Perſons in the houſe of *Commons* for that they were attainted, and thereby not legall, nor habilitate to ſerue in *Parliament*, being diſabled in the higheſt degree; And that it ſhould bee a great incongruitie to haue them to make *Lawes*, who themſelues were not *Inlawed*. The truth was, that diuers of thoſe which had in the time of King RICHARD beene ſtrongeſt and moſt declared for the Kings Partie, were returned *Knights* and *Burgeſſes* for the *Parliament*; whether by care or recom-

recommendation from the *State*, or the voluntarie inclination of the *People*: many of which had beene by RICHARD the third attainted by *Outlawries*, or otherwiſe. The King was ſomewhat troubled with this. For though it had a graue and ſpecious Shew, yet it reflected vpon his Partie. But wiſely not ſhewing himſelfe at all moued therewith, hee would not vnderſtand it but as a *Caſe* in Law; and wiſhed the *Iudges* to be aduiſed thereupon: who for that purpoſe were forthwith aſſembled in the *Exchequer-Chamber* (which is the *Councell-Chamber* of the *Iudges*) and vpon deliberation they gaue a graue and ſafe *Opinion* and *Aduice*, mixed with *Law* and *Conuenience*, which was; that the *Knights* and *Burgeſſes* attainted by the courſe of Law, ſhould forbeare to come into the Houſe, till a Law were paſſed for the reuerſall of their *Attaindors*.

It was at that time incidently moued amongſt the *Iudges* in their Conſultation, what ſhould be done for the King himſelfe, who likewiſe was attainted? But it was with vnanimous conſent reſolued, *That the Crowne takes away all defects and ſtops in bloud: and that from the time the King did aſſume the Crowne, the fountaine was cleared, and all Attaindors and Corruption of bloud diſcharged.* But neuertheleſſe for *Honours* ſake it was ordained by *Parliament*, that all *Records* wherein there was any memorie, or mention of the Kings *Attaindor*, ſhould be defaced, cancelled, and taken of the *File*.

But on the part of the Kings *Enimies* there were by *Parliament* attainted; the late Duke of *Gloceſter*, calling himſelfe RICHARD the Third, The Duke of *Norfolke*, the Earle of *Surrey*, Viſcount LOVEL, the Lord FERRERS, the Lord ZOVCH, RICHARD RATCLIFFE, WILLIAM CATESBY, and many others of degree and qualitie. In which Bills

Bills of *Attaindors*, neuertheleſſe there were contayned many iuſt and temperate *Clauſes*, *Sauings*, and *Proviſoes*, well ſhewing and fore-tokening the wiſdome, ſtay, and moderation of the Kings ſpirit of Gouernment. And for the *Pardon* of the reſt, that had ſtood againſt the King; the King, vpon a ſecond aduice, thought it not fit it ſhould paſſe by *Parliament*, the better (being matter of Grace) to impropriate the thanks to himſelfe: vſing onely the opportunitie of a *Parliament* time, the better to diſperſe it into the *Veines* of the *Kingdome*. Therefore during the *Parliament*, hee publiſhed his *Royall Proclamation*, offering *Pardon* and *Grace* of reſtitution, to all ſuch as had taken *Armes*, or beene participant of any Attempts againſt him; ſo as, they ſubmitted themſelues to his mercie by a Day, and tooke the Oath of *Allegeance* and Fidelitie to him. Whereupon many came out of *Sanctuary*, and many more came out of *Feare*, no leſſe guiltie then thoſe that had taken *Sanctuarie*.

As for *Money* or *Treaſure*, the King thought it not ſeaſonable, or fit to demand any of his *Subiects* at this *Parliament*: both becauſe he had receiued ſatisfaction from them in matters of ſo great importance: and becauſe he could not remunerate them with any *General Pardon*, being preuented therein by the *Coronation Pardon*, paſſed immediatly before: but chiefely, for that it was in euery mans eye, what great *Forfeitures* and *Confiſcations* he had at that preſent to helpe himſelfe: Whereby thoſe *Caſualties* of the Crowne might in reaſon ſpare the *Purſes* of the Subiect; eſpecially in a time when he was in peace with all his Neighbours. Some few *Lawes* paſſed at that *Parliament*, almoſt for forme ſake: amongſt which there was *One*, to reduce Aliens, being made Denizens, to pay ſtrangers Cuſtomes; and *another*, to draw to himſelfe the *Seiſures* and *Compoſitions* of *Italians Goods*, for not imployment being

Points

Points of Profit to his Coffers, whereof from the very Beginning he was not forgetfull, and had beene more happie at the Latter End, if his early prouidence (which kept him from all neceſſitie of exacting vpon his people) could likewiſe haue attemp'red his nature therein. He added during *Parliament*, to his former *Creations*, the *Innoblement* or aduancement in *Nobilitie* of a few others: The Lord CHANDOS of *Brittaine*, was made Earle of *Bathe*; Sir GILES DAWBENY was made Lord *Dawbeny*; and Sir ROBERT WILLOVGHBY, Lord *Brooke*.

The King did alſo with great Nobleneſſe and Bountie (which Vertues at that time had their turnes in his Nature) reſtore EDWARD STAFFORD (eldeſt ſonne to HENRY, Duke of *Buckingham*, attainted in the time of King RICHARD) not onely to his *Dignities*, but to his *Fortunes* and *Poſſeſſions*, which were great: to which he was moued alſo by a kind of gratitude, for that the Duke was the man that moued the firſt Stone againſt the Tyrannie of King RICHARD, and indeed made the King a Bridge to the Crowne vpon his owne Ruines. Thus the *Parliament* brake vp.

The *Parliament* being diſſolued, the King ſent forthwith Money to redeeme the Marqueſſe *Dorſet*, and Sir IOHN BOVRCHIER, whom hee had left as his *Pledges* at *Paris*, for Money which hee had borrowed, when he made his Expedition for *England*. And thereupon hee tooke a fit occaſion to ſend the *Lord Treaſurer* and *Maſter* BRAY (whom hee vſed as Councellor) to the Lord *Maior* of *London*, requiring of the Citie a *Preſt* of ſix thouſand Markes: But after many *Parlees*, hee could obtaine but two thouſand pounds. Which neuertheleſſe the King tooke in good part; as Men vſe to doe, that practiſe to borrow Money, when they haue no neede. About this time, the King

King called vnto his *Priuie-Councell*, IOHN MORTON, and RICHARD FOXE, the one *Biſhop* of *Elie*, the other *Biſhop* of *Exceſter*, vigilant men, and ſecret, and ſuch as kept watch with him almoſt vpon al men elſe. They had beene both verſed in his Affaires, before hee came to the Crowne, and were partakers of his aduerſe Fortune. This MORTON ſoone after vpon the death of BOVRCHIER, he made *Archbiſhop* of *Canterbury*. And for FOXE, hee made him Lord *Keeper* of his *Priuie-Seale*, and afterwards aduanced him by Degrees, from *Exceſter* to *Bathe* and *Wells*, thence to *Durham*, and laſt, to *Wincheſter*. For although the King loued to imploy and aduance *Biſhops*, becauſe hauing rich *Biſhoprickes*, they carried their Reward vpon themſelues: yet hee did vſe to rayſe them by ſteps; that hee might not looſe the profit of the *Firſt-fruits*, which by that courſe of Gradation was multiplied.

At laſt, vpon the eighteenth of *Ianuary* was ſolemnized the ſo long expected and ſo much deſired Marriage, betweene the King & the Lady ELIZABETH: Which Day of Marriage was celebrated with greater Triumph, and Demonſtrations (eſpecially on the peoples part) of Ioy and Gladneſſe, then the dayes eyther of this Entrie, or Coronation; which the King rather noted, then liked. And it is true, that all his life time, while the Lady ELIZABETH liued with him, for ſhe died before him) hee ſhewed himſelfe no very indulgent Husband towards her, though ſhee was beautifull, gentle, and fruitfull. But his auerſion towards the Houſe of YORKE was ſo predominant in him, as it found place, not onely in his *Warres* and *Counſells*, but in his *Chamber* and *Bed*.

Towards the middle of the *Spring*, the King, full of confidence and aſſurance, as a *Prince* that had beene victorious in *Battaile*, and had preuayled with his *Parliament*

liament in all that hee desired, and had the *Ring* of *Acclamations* fresh in his eares, thought the rest of his Raigne should bee but Play, and the enioying of a *Kingdome*. Yet as a wise and watchfull King, he would not neglect any thing for his safetie; thinking neuertheleſſe to performe all things now, rather as an *Exercise*, then as a *Labour*. So hee being truly informed, that the *Northerne parts* were not onely affectionate to the House of YORKE, but particularly had beene deuoted to King RICHARD the third; thought it would bee a Summer well spent to visite those *Parts*, and by his presence and application of himselfe, to reclaime and rectifie those humours. But the King, in his accompt of *Peace*, and *Calmes*, did much ouer-cast his Fortunes, which proued for many yeares together full of *Broken Seas*, *Tides*, and *Tempests*. For he was no sooner come to *Lincolne*, where he kept his *Easter*, but hee receiued newes, that the *Lord* LOVEL, HVMPHREY STAFFORD, and THOMAS STAFFORD (who had formerly taken *Sanctuarie* at *Colchester*) were departed out of *Sanctuarie*, but to what place, no man could tell. Which aduertisement the King despised, and continued his Iourney to *Yorke*. At *Yorke* there came fresh and more certaine aduertisement, that the *Lord* LOVEL was at hand with a great power of men, and that the STAFFORDS were in Armes in *Worcestershire*, and had made their approaches to the Citie of *Worcester*, to assaile it. The King, as a Prince of great and profound iudgement, was not much moued with it; for that hee thought it was but a Ragge or Remnant of *Bosworth-Field*, and had nothing in it of the maine Partie of the House of YORKE. But hee was more doubtfull of the raysing of Forces to resist the *Rebels*, then of the Resistance it selfe, for that hee was in a *Core* of People, whose affections he suspected. But the Action enduring no delay, hee did speedily

leuie and ſend againſt the *Lord* LOVEL to the number of three thouſand men, ill armed, but well aſſured (beeing taken ſome few out of his owne Traine, and the reſt out of the Tenants and Followers of ſuch as were ſafe to bee truſted) vnder the Conduct of the *Duke* of *Bedford*. And as his manner was to ſend his Pardons rather before the Sword then after, hee gaue *Commiſſion* to the *Duke*, to proclaime pardon to all that would come in: Which the *Duke*, vpon his approach to the *Lord* LOVELS Campe, did performe. And it fell out as the King expected, the *Heralds* were the *Great-Ordnance*. For the *Lord* LOVEL, vpon *Proclamation* of Pardon, miſtruſting his men, fled into *Lancaſhire*, and lurking for a time with Sir THOMAS BROVGHTON, after ſailed ouer into *Flanders*, to the *Ladie* MARGARET. And his men, forſaken of their *Captaine*, did preſently ſubmit themſelues to the *Duke*. The STAFFORDS likewiſe, and their Forces, hearing what had happened to the *Lord* LOVEL (in whoſe ſucceſſe their chiefe truſt was) deſpaired, and diſperſed. The two Brothers, taking *Sanctuarie* at *Colnham*, a Village neare *Abington*; which Place, vpon view of their *Priuiledge* in the Kings Bench, beeing iudged no ſufficient *Sanctuarie* for Traitors, HVMPHREY was executed at *Tiburne*; and THOMAS, as beeing led by his elder brother, was pardoned. So this *Rebellion* proued but a Blaſt, and the King hauing by this Iourney purged a little the Dregs and Leauen of the *Northerne People*, that were before in no good affection towards him, returned to *London*.

In *September* following, the *Queene* was deliuered of her firſt ſonne, whom the King (in honour of the *Britiſh Race*, of which himſelfe was) named ARTHVR, according to the Name of that ancient worthie King of the *Britaines*; in whoſe Acts there is truth enough to make him Famous, beſides that which is

Fabu-

Fabulous. The *Childe* was ſtrong and able, though hee was borne in the *eight Moneth*, which the Phyſicians doe preiudge.

THere followed this yeare, beeing the *Second* of the Kings Raigne, a ſtrange Accident of *State*, whereof the Relations which wee haue, are ſo naked, as they leaue it ſcarce credible, not for the nature of it (for it hath fallen out oft) but for the manner and circumſtance of it, eſpecially in the beginnings. Therefore wee ſhall make our Iudgement vpon the things themſelues, as they giue light one to another, and (as wee can) digge *Trueth* out of the *Mine*. The King was greene in his eſtate; and contrarie to his owne opinion, and deſert both, was not without much hatred throughout the *Realme*. The root of all, was the diſcountenancing of the Houſe of YORKE, which the generall Bodie of the *Realme* ſtill affected. This did alienate the hearts of the *Subiects* from him daily more and more, eſpecially when they ſaw, that after his Marriage, and after a Sonne borne, the King did neuertheleſſe not ſo much as proceed to the *Coronation* of the *Queene*, not vouchſafing her the honour of a *Matrimoniall Crowne*; for the *Coronation* of her was not till almoſt two yeares after, when Danger had taught him what to doe. But much more, when it was ſpread abroad (whether by *Errour*, or the cunning of *Male-contents*) that the King had a purpoſe to put to death EDWARD PLANTAGENET cloſely in the *Tower*: Whoſe caſe was ſo neerely paralleld with that of EDWARD the Fourths Children, in reſpect of the Bloud, like Age, and the very place of the *Tower*, as it did refreſh and reflect vpon the King a moſt odious reſemblance, as if hee would bee another King RICHARD. And all this time it was ſtill whiſpered euery where, that at leaſt one of the Children of ED-

WARD the Fourth was liuing. Which Bruite was cunningly fomented by ſuch as deſired *Innouation*. Neither was the Kings nature and cuſtomes greatly fit to diſperſe theſe *Miſtes*; but contrariwiſe hee had a faſhion rather to create Doubts, then Aſſurance. Thus was *Fuell* prepared for the *Sparke*: the *Sparke* that afterwards kindled ſuch a fire, and combuſtion, was at the firſt contemptible.

There was a ſubtile *Prieſt* called RICHARD SIMON, that liued in *Oxford*, and had to his Pupill a *Bakers* ſonne named LAMBERT SIMNELL, of the age of ſome fifteene yeares; a comely Youth, and well fauoured, not without ſome extraordinarie dignitie, and grace of aſpect. It came into this *Prieſts* fancie (hearing what men talked, and in hope to raiſe himſelfe to ſome great *Biſhopricke*) to cauſe this *Lad* to counterfeite and perſonate the ſecond ſonne of EDWARD the Fourth, ſuppoſed to bee murdered; and afterward (for hee changed his intention in the manage) the Lord EDWARD PLANTAGENET then priſoner in the *Tower*, and accordingly to frame him and inſtruct him in the *Part* hee was to play. This is that which (as was touched before) ſeemeth ſcarcely credible; Not that a *Falſe perſon* ſhould bee aſſumed to gaine a *Kingdome*, for it hath beene ſeene in ancient and late times; nor that it ſhould come into the mind of ſuch an abiect Fellow, to enterpriſe ſo great a matter; for high Conceits doe ſometimes come ſtreaming into the Imaginations of baſe perſons, eſpecially when they are drunke with *Newes*, and *Talke* of the people. But heere is that which hath no apparance; That this *Prieſt* beeing vtterly vnacquainted with the true *Perſon*, according to whoſe patterne hee ſhould ſhape his *Counterfeit*, ſhould thinke it poſſible for him to inſtruct his *Player*, either in geſture and faſhions, or in recounting paſt matters of his life and edu-

education; or in fit anſweres to queſtions, or the like, any wayes to come neare the reſemblance of him whom hee was to repreſent. For this *Lad* was not to perſonate one, that had beene long before taken out of his Cradle, or conueighed away in his infancie, knowne to few; but a *youth* that till the age almoſt of ten yeares had beene brought vp in a *Court* where infinite eyes had beene vpon him. For King EDWARD touched with remorſe of his brother the *Duke* of *Clarences* death, would not indeed reſtore his ſonne, (of whom wee ſpeake) to bee *Duke* of *Clarence*, but yet created him *Earle* of *Warwicke*, reuiuing his honour on the mothers ſide, and vſed him honourably during his time, though RICHARD the Third afterwards confined him. So that it cannot bee, but that ſome great *Perſon*, that knew particularly, and familiarly EDWARD PLANTAGENET, had a hand in the buſineſſe, from whom the *Prieſt* might take his ayme. That which is moſt probable, out of the precedent and ſubſequent Acts, is, that it was the *Queene Dowager*, from whom this action had the principall ſource and motion. For certaine it is, ſhee was a buſie negotiating woman, and in her *withdrawing-Chamber* had the fortunate *Conſpiracie* for the King againſt King RICHARD the Third, beene hatched; which the King knew, and remembred perhaps but too well; and was at this time extreamely diſcontent with the King, thinking her daughter (as the King handled the matter) not aduanced, but depreſſed: and none could hold the *Booke* ſo well to prompt and inſtruct this *Stage-play*, as ſhee could. Neuertheleſſe it was not her meaning, nor no more was it the meaning of any of the better and ſager ſort that fauoured this Enterpriſe and knew the Secret, that this diſguiſed *Idoll* ſhould poſſeſſe the *Crowne*; but at his perill to make way to the Ouerthrow

throw of the King: and that done, they had their ſeuerall *Hopes* and *Wayes*. That which doth chiefly fortifie this Coniecture, is, that as ſoone as the matter brake foorth in any ſtrength, it was one of the Kings firſt Acts to cloiſter the *Queene Dowager* in the *Nunnery* of *Bermondſey*, and to take away all her lands and eſtate; and this by a cloſe *Councell* without any legall proceeding, vpon farre-fecht Pretences; *That ſhee had deliuered her two daughters out of Sanctuarie to King* RICHARD *contrarie to promiſe*. Which Proceeding being euen at that time taxed for rigorous and vndue, both in matter and manner; makes it very probable there was ſome greater matter againſt her, which the King vpon reaſon of *Policie*, and to auoid enuy would not publiſh. It is likewiſe no ſmall argument that there was ſome ſecret in it, and ſome ſuppreſſing of Examinations; for that the *Prieſt* SIMON himſelfe, after hee was taken was neuer brought to execution; no not ſo much as to publike *Triall* (as many *Clergiemen* were vpon leſſe Treaſons) but was onely ſhut vp cloſe in a *Dungeon*. Adde to this that after the Earle of *Lincolne* (a principall Perſon of the Houſe of YORKE) was ſlaine in *Stoke-field*, the King opened himſelfe to to ſome of his *Counſell*, that he was ſorie for the *Earles* death, becauſe by him (hee ſaid) hee might haue knowne the bottome of his danger.

But to returne to the *Narration* it ſelfe; SIMON did firſt inſtruct his *Scholler* for the part of RICHARD *Duke* of *Yorke*, ſecond ſonne to King EDWARD the Fourth, and this was at ſuch time as it was voiced that the King purpoſed to put to death EDWARD PLANTAGENET priſoner in the Tower, whereat there was great murmur. But hearing ſoone after a generall bruit that PLANTAGENET had eſcaped out of the Tower, and thereby finding him ſo much beloued amongſt the people, and ſuch reioycing at his

his Eſcape, the cunning *Prieſt* changed his Copie, and choſe now PLANTAGENET to bee the Subiect his *Pupill* ſhould perſonate, becauſe hee was more in the preſent ſpeech, and votes of the people; and it pieced better, and followed more cloſe and handſomely vpon the bruit of PLANTAGENETS eſcape. But yet doubting that there would bee too neare looking, and too much *Perſpective* into his Diſguiſe, if hee ſhould ſhew it here in *England*; hee thought good (after the manner of *Scenes* in *Stage-Playes* and *Maskes*) to ſhew it a farre of; and therefore ſailed with his Scholler into *Ireland*, where the Affection to the Houſe of YORKE was moſt in height. The King had beene a little improuident in the matters of *Ireland*, and had not remoued *Officers* and *Councellors*, and put in their places, or at leaſt intermingled perſons, of whom hee ſtood aſſured, as he ſhould haue done, ſince hee knew the ſtrong Bent of that Countrey towards the Houſe of YORKE; and that it was a tickliſh and vnſetled State, more eaſie to receiue diſtempers and mutations, then *England* was. But truſting to the reputation of his Victories and Succeſſes in *England*, hee thought hee ſhould haue time enough to extend his Cares afterwards to that ſecond Kingdome.

Wherefore through this neglect, vpon the comming of SIMON with his pretended PLANTAGENET into *Ireland*, all things were prepared for Reuolt and Sedition, almoſt as if they had beene ſet and plotted before hand. SIMONS firſt addreſſe was to the *Lord* THOMAS FITZ-GERARD, *Earle* of *Kildare*, and Deputie of *Ireland*: before whoſe Eyes hee did caſt ſuch a Miſt (by his owne inſinuation, and by the carriage of his Youth, that expreſſed a naturall Princely behauiour) as ioyned perhaps with ſome inward Vapours of Ambition and Affection in the *Earles* owne minde, left him fully

fully poſſeſſed, that it was the true PLANTAGENET. The *Earle* preſently communicated the matter with ſome of the *Nobles* and others there, at the firſt ſecretly. But finding them of like affection to himſelfe, hee ſuffered it of purpoſe to vent and paſſe abroad; becauſe they thought it not ſafe to reſolue, till they had a taſt of the *Peoples* inclination. But if the *Great* ones were in forwardneſſe, the *People* were in furie, entertayning this *Airie bodie* or *Phantaſme* with incredible affection; partly out of their great deuotion to the Houſe of YORKE; partly out of a proud humour in the Nation, to giue a *King* to the Realme of *England*. Neither did the *Partie* in this heate of affection much trouble themſelues with the Attaindor of GEORGE *Duke* of *Clarence*; hauing newly learned by the Kings example, that *Attaindors* doe not interrupt the conueighing of *Title* to the Crowne. And as for the daughters of King EDWARD the Fourth, they thought King RICHARD had ſaid enough for them: and tooke them to bee but as of the Kings *Partie*, becauſe they were in his power and at his diſpoſing. So that with maruelous conſent and applauſe, this Counterfeit PLANTAGENET was brought with great ſolemnitie to the Caſtle of *Dublin*, and there ſaluted, ſerued, and honoured as King; the *Boy* becomming it well, and doing nothing that did bewray the baſeneſſe of his condition. And within a few dayes after hee was proclaimed King in *Dublin*, by the name of King EDWARD the Sixt; there beeing not a ſword drawne in King HENRY his quarrell.

The King was much mooued with this vnexpected accident, when it came to his eares, both becauſe it ſtrooke vpon that *String* which euer he moſt feared, as alſo becauſe it was ſtirred in ſuch a *Plate*, where hee could not with ſafetie transferre his owne perſon, to

ſuppreſſe

ſuppreſſe it. For partly through naturall valour, and partly through an vniuerſall ſuſpition (not knowing whom to truſt) he was euer readie to waite vpon all his atchieuements in perſon. The King therefore firſt called his *Councell* together at the *Charter-houſe* at *Shine*. Which *Councell* was held with great ſecrecie, but the open *Decrees* thereof, which preſently came abroad, were three.

The firſt was, that the Queene *Dowager*, for that ſhe, contrarie to her *Pact*, and *Agreement* with thoſe that had concluded with her concerning the *Mariage* of her daughter ELIZABETH with King HENRY, had neuertheleſſe deliuered her daughters out of *Sanctuarie* into King RICHARDS hands; ſhould be cloiſtered in the Nunnerie of *Bermondſey*, and forfeit all her lands and goods.

The next was, that EDWARD PLANTAGENET, then Cloſe-priſoner in the *Tower*, ſhould be in the moſt publike and notorious manner, that could be deuiſed, ſhewed vnto the people: In part to diſcharge the King of the Enuie of that opinion and bruite, how he had beene put to death priuily in the *Tower*; But chiefly to make the people ſee the leuitie and impoſture of the proceedings of *Ireland*, and that their PLANTAGENET was indeed but a puppit, or a *Counterfeit*.

The third was, that there ſhould be againe proclaimed a *Generall-Pardon* to all that would reueale their offences, and ſubmit themſelues by a day. And that this *Pardon* ſhould be conceiued in ſo ample and liberall a manner, as no *High-Treaſon* (no not againſt the Kings owne perſon) ſhould be excepted. Which though it might ſeeme ſtrange, yet was it not ſo to a wiſe King, that knew his greateſt dangers were not from the leaſt *Treaſons*, but from the greateſt. Theſe reſolutions of the King and his *Councell* were imme-

diatly put in execution. And firſt, the Queene *Dowager* was put into the Monaſterie of *Bermondſey*, and all her eſtate ſeized into the Kings hands, whereat there was much wondering; That a weake woman, for the yeelding to the menaces and promiſes of a *Tyrant*, after ſuch a diſtance of time (wherein the King had ſhewed no diſpleaſure nor alteration) but much more after ſo happie a marriage, betweene the *King* and her *Daughter*, bleſſed with *Iſſue-male*, ſhould vpon a ſodaine mutabilitie or diſcloſure of the Kings mind be ſo ſeuerely handled.

This *Lady* was amongſt the examples of great varietie of *Fortune*. Shee had firſt from a diſtreſſed *Suitor*, and deſolate *Widdow*, beene taken to the *Mariage-Bed* of a *Batchelour-King*, the goodlieſt perſonage of his time; and euen in his raigne ſhe had endured a ſtrange *Eclipſe* by the Kings flight, and temporarie depriuing from the Crowne. Shee was alſo very happie, in that ſhe had by him faire *Iſſue*, and continued his Nuptiall Loue (helping her ſelfe by ſome obſequious bearing and diſſembling of his pleaſures) to the very end. Shee was much affectionate to her owne Kindred, euen vnto *Faction*; which did ſtirre great Enuie in the *Lords* of the Kings ſide, who counted her Bloud a diſparagement to be mingled with the Kings. With which *Lords* of the Kings bloud, ioyned alſo the Kings *Fauorite* the Lord HASTINGS; who, notwithſtanding the Kings great affection to him, was thought at times, through her malice and Splene, not to be out of danger of falling. After her husbands death, ſhe was matter of *Tragedie*, hauing liued to ſee her *Brother* beheaded, and her two *Sonnes* depoſed from the Crowne, baſtarded in their bloud, and cruelly murthered. All this while neuertheleſſe ſhee enioyed her Libertie, State, and Fortunes. But afterwards againe, vpon the *Riſe* of the

Wheele,

Wheele, when ſhe had a *King* to her *Sonne-in-Law*, and was made *Grand-mother* to a *Grand-child* of the beſt Sexe; yet was ſhe (vpon darke and vnknowne Reaſons, and no leſſe ſtrange Pretences) precipitated, and baniſhed the World, into a *Nunnerie*; where it was almoſt thought dangerous to viſit her, or ſee her; and where not long after ſhe ended her life: but was by the Kings Commandement buried with the King her Husband at *Windſore*. Shee was *Foundreſſe* of *Queenes-College* in *Cambridge*. For this *Act* the King ſuſtained great obloquie, which neuertheleſſe (beſides the reaſon of State) was ſomewhat ſweetned to him by a great *Confiſcation*.

About this time alſo, EDWARD PLANTAGENET was vpon a *Sonday* brought throughout all the principall Streets of *London*, to be ſeene of the people. And hauing paſſed the view of the Streets, was conducted to PAVLS *Church*, in ſolemne *Proceſſion*, where great ſtore of people were aſſembled. And it was prouided alſo in good faſhion, that diuerſe of the *Nobilitie*, and others of Qualitie (eſpecially of thoſe that the King moſt ſuſpected, and knew the perſon of PLANTAGENET beſt) had communication with the young Gentleman by the way, and entertayned him with ſpeech and diſcourſe; which did in effect marre the *Pageant* in *Ireland* with the Subiects here, at leaſt with ſo many, as out of error, and not out of malice, might be miſ-led. Neuertheleſſe, in *Ireland* (where it was too late to goe backe) it wrought little or no effect. But contrariwiſe, they turned the *Impoſture* vpon the King, and gaue out, That the King, to defeat the true *Inheritor*, and to mocke the World, and blinde the eyes of ſimple men, had tricked vp a *Boy* in the likeneſſe of EDWARD PLANTAGENET, and ſhewed him to the people, not ſparing to prophane the *Ceremonie* of a *Proceſſion*, the more to countenance the *Fable*.

The *Generall-Pardon* likewiſe neere the ſame time came forth; and the King therewithall omitted no diligence, in giuing ſtraight order, for the keeping of the *Ports*; that *Fugitiues*, *Male-contents*, or ſuſpected *Perſons* might not paſſe ouer into *Ireland*, and *Flanders*.

Meane while the *Rebels* in *Ireland* had ſent priuie Meſſengers both into *England*, and into *Flanders*, who in both places had wrought effects of no ſmall importance. For in *England* they wonne to their Partie IOHN, Earle of *Lincolne*, ſonne of IOHN DE LA-POLE, Duke of *Suffolke*, and of ELIZABETH, King EDWARD the Fourths eldeſt ſiſter. This *Earle* was a man of great wit and courage, and had his thoughts highly rayſed by Hopes and Expectations for a time. For RICHARD the third had a Reſolution, out of his hatred to both his Brethren, King EDWARD, and the Duke of *Clarence*, and their Lines, (hauing had his hand in both their blouds) to diſable their Iſſues vpon falſe and incompetent Pretexts; the one, of *Attaindor*; the other, of *Illegitimation*: and to deſigne this *Gentleman* (in caſe himſelfe ſhould die without Children) for *Inheritor* of the *Crowne*. Neither was this vnknowne to the King, who had ſecretly an Eye vpon him. But the King hauing taſted of the Enuie of the people, for his impriſonment of EDWARD PLANTAGENET, was doubtfull to heape vp any more diſtaſts of that kind, by the impriſonment of DE LA-POLE alſo; the rather thinking it Policie to conſerue him as a *Corriuall* vnto the other. The *Earle* of *Lincolne* was induced to participate with the Action of *Ireland*, not lightly vpon the ſtrength of the *Proceedings* there, which was but a *Bubble*, but vpon Letters from the Lady MARGARET of *Burgundie*, in whoſe ſuccours and declaration for the *Enterpriſe*, there ſeemed to be a more ſolid foundation, both for Reputation

tation and Forces. Neither did the *Earle* refraine the Buſineſſe, for that he knew the pretended PLANTAGENET to be but an *Idoll*. But contrariwiſe, hee was more glad it ſhould be the falſe PLANTAGENET then the true: becauſe the Falſe being ſure to fall away of himſelfe, and the True to be made ſure of by the King; it might open and paue a faire and prepared way to his owne *Title*. With this Reſolution hee ſayled ſecretly into *Flanders*; where was a little before arriued the Lord LOVEL, leauing a correſpondence here in *England* with Sir THOMAS BROVGHTON, a man of great Power and Dependencies in *Lancaſhire*. For before this time, when the pretended PLANTAGENET was firſt receiued in *Ireland*, ſecret Meſſengers had beene alſo ſent to the Lady MARGARET, aduertiſing her what was paſſed in *Ireland*, imploring Succours in an Enterpriſe (as they ſaid) ſo pious and iuſt, and that God had ſo miraculouſly proſpered the beginning thereof; and making offer, that all things ſhould be guided by her will and direction, as the *Soueraigne Patroneſſe* and *Protectreſſe* of the Enterpriſe. MARGARET was ſecond ſiſter to King EDWARD the Fourth, and had beene ſecond Wife to CHARLES, ſurnamed the HARDY, Duke of *Burgundie*; by whom, hauing no Children of her owne, ſhe did with ſingular care and tenderneſſe intend the Education of PHILIP and MARGARET, Grand-children to her former Husband; which wonne her great loue and authoritie among the *Dutch*. This *Princeſſe* (hauing the *Spirit* of a Man, and *Malice* of a Woman) abounding in *Treaſure*, by the greatneſſe of her *Dower*, and her prouident Gouernment, and being Childleſſe, and without any neerer Care, made it her *Deſigne* and Enterpriſe, to ſee the *Maieſtie Royall* of *England* once againe re-placed in her Houſe, and had ſet vp King HENRY as a Marke, at whoſe ouer-

ouerthrow all her actions ſhould ayme and ſhoote; inſomuch as all the *Counſells* of his ſucceeding troubles came chiefle out of that *Quiuer*. And ſhee bare ſuch a mortall hatred to the Houſe of LANCASTER, and perſonally to the *King*, as ſhe was no wayes mollified by the *Coniunction* of the Houſes in her *Neeces* marriage, but rather hated her *Neece*, as the meanes of the Kings aſcent to the *Crowne*, and aſſurance therein. Wherefore with great violence of affection ſhe embraced this Ouerture. And vpon Counſaile taken with the *Earle* of *Lincolne*, and the Lord LOVEL, and ſome other of the *Partie*, it was reſolued with all ſpeed, the two *Lords* aſſiſted with a Regiment of two thouſand *Almaines*, being choice and Veterane *Bands*, vnder the command of MARTIN SWART (a valiant and experimented *Captaine*) ſhould paſſe ouer into *Ireland* to the new *King*. Hoping, that when the *Action* ſhould haue the face of a receiued and ſetled *Regalitie* (with ſuch a ſecond Perſon, as the *Earle* of *Lincolne*, and the *Coniunction* and reputation of forraine ſuccours) the fame of it would embolden and prepare all the *Partie* of the *Confederates* and *Malecontents* within the Realme of *England*, to giue them aſſiſtance, when they ſhould come ouer there. And for the *Perſon* of the *Counterfeit*, it was agreed, that if all things ſucceeded wel, he ſhould be put downe, and the true PLANTAGENET receiued: Wherein neuertheleſſe the *Earle* of *Lincolne* had his particular hopes. After they were come into *Ireland*, and that the *Partie* tooke courage, by ſeeing themſelues together in a Bodie, they grew very confident of ſucceſſe, conceiuing and diſcourſing amongſt themſelues, that they went in vpon farre better *Cardes* to ouerthrow King HENRY, then King HENRY had to ouerthrow King RICHARD. And that if there were not a Sword drawne againſt them in *Ireland*, it

was

was a *Signe* the Swords in *England* would be ſoone ſheathed, or beaten downe. And firſt, for a *Brauery* vpon this acceſſion of power, they crowned their new *King* in the *Cathedrall Church* of *Dublin*; who formerly had beene but proclaymed onely; and then ſate in *Councell* what ſhould further be done. At which *Councell* though it were propounded by ſome, that it were the beſt way to eſtabliſh themſelues firſt in *Ireland*, and to make that the Seat of the Warre, and to draw King HENRY thither in perſon, by whoſe abſence, they thought there would be great alterations and commotions in *England*; yet becauſe the *Kingdome* there was poore, and they ſhould not be able to keepe their *Armie* together, nor pay their *Germane* Soldiers, and for that alſo the ſway of the *Iriſh-men*, and generally of the Men-of-warre, which (as in ſuch caſes of Popular tumults is vſuall) did in effect gouerne their Leaders, was eager, and in affection to make their fortunes vpon *England*; It was concluded with all poſſible ſpeed to tranſport their forces into *England*. The King in the meane time, who at the firſt when he heard what was done in *Ireland*, though it troubled him, yet thought hee ſhould bee well enough able to ſcatter the *Iriſh* as a *Flight* of *Birds*, and rattle away this *Swarme* of Bees, with their *King*; when he heard afterwards that the Earle of *Lincolne* was embarqued in the action, and that the Lady MARGARET was declared for it; he apprehended the danger in a true Degree as it was, and ſaw plainly that his Kingdome muſt againe be put to the *Stake*, and that he muſt fight for it. And firſt, he did conceiue, before he vnderſtood of the Earle of *Lincolns* fayling into *Ireland* out of *Flanders*, that he ſhould be aſſailed both vpon the *Eaſt-parts* of the Kingdome of *England* by ſome impreſſion from *Flanders*, and vpon the *North-weſt* out of *Ireland*. And therefore hauing

hauing ordered Muſters to be made in both *Parts*, and hauing prouiſionally deſigned two *Generals*, IASPER Earle of *Bedford*, and IOHN Earle of *Oxford*, (meaning himſelfe alſo to goe in perſon, where the Affaires ſhould moſt require it) and neuertheleſſe not expecting any actuall *Inuaſion* at that time (the Winter being farre on) he tooke his iourney himſelfe towards *Suffolke* and *Northfolke*, for the confirming of thoſe parts. And being come to S. *Edmonds-bury*, hee vnderſtood, that THOMAS, Marqueſſe *Dorſet* (who had beene one of the *Pledges* in *France*) was haſting towards him, to purge himſelfe of ſome Accuſations, which had beene made againſt him. But the King, though hee kept an Eare for him, yet was the time ſo doubtfull, that hee ſent the *Earle* of *Oxford* to meet him, and forthwith to carry him to the *Tower*; with a faire Meſſage neuertheleſſe, that hee ſhould beare that diſgrace with patience, for that the King meant not his hurt, but onely to preſerue him from doing hurt, eyther to the Kings ſeruice, or to himſelfe; and that the King ſhould alwayes be able (when hee had cleared himſelfe) to make him reparation.

From S. *Edmonds-bury* he went to *Norwich*, where he kept his *Chriſtmas*. And from thence he went (in a manner of *Pilgrimage*) to *Walſingham*, where hee viſited our *Ladies Church*, famous for *Miracles*, and made his Prayers and Vowes for helpe and deliuerance. And from thence he returned by *Cambridge* to *London*. Not long after the *Rebels*, with their King (vnder the leading of the Earle of *Lincolne*, the Earle of *Kildare*, the Lord LOVEL, and Colonell SWART) landed at *Fouldrey* in *Lancaſhire*, whither there repaired to them, Sir THOMAS BROVGHTON, with ſome ſmall companie of *Engliſh*. The King by that time (knowing now the Storme would not diuide, but fall in one place) had leuied *Forces* in good num-

number; And in perſon (taking with him his two deſigned *Generals*, the Duke of *Bedford*, and the Earle of *Oxford*) was come on his way towards them as farre as *Couentry*, whence he ſent forth a troupe of *Light-Horſemen* for diſcouerie, and to intercept ſome ſtraglers of the Enemies, by whom he might the better vnderſtand the particulars of their Progreſſe and purpoſes, which was accordingly done; though the King otherwiſe was not without intelligence from *Eſpials* in the *Campe*.

The *Rebels* tooke their way towards *Yorke*, without ſpoyling the *Countrie*, or any acte of Hoſtilitie, the better to put themſelues into fauour of the people, and to perſonate their *King*: who (no doubt, out of a Princely feeling) was ſparing, and compaſſionate towards his Subiects. But their *Snowball* did not gather as it went. For the people came not in to them: Neither did any riſe or declare themſelues in other parts of the Kingdome for them, which was cauſed partly by the good taſt that the King had giuen his People of his *Gouernement*, ioyned with the reputation of his *Felicitie*; and partly for that it was an odious thing to the people of *England*, to haue a King brought in to them vpon the ſhoulders of *Iriſh* and *Dutch*, of which their Armie was in ſubſtance compounded. Neither was it a thing done with any great iudgement on the *Party* of the *Rebels*, for them to take their way towards *Yorke*: conſidering that howſoeuer thoſe parts had formerly beene a *Nurſerie* of their friends; yet it was there, where the Lord LOVEL had ſo lately disbanded, and where the Kings preſence had a little before qualified diſcontents. The *Earle* of *Lincolne* deceiued of his hopes of the Countries concourſe vnto him (in which caſe he would haue temporized) and ſeeing the buſineſſe paſt Retraict, reſolued to make on where the King was,

and to giue him battaile; and thereupon, marched towards *Newarke*, thinking to haue ſurprized the Towne. But the King was ſomewhat before this time come to *Nottingham*, where he called a *Counſell* of Warre, at which was conſulted, whether it were beſt to protract time, or ſpeedily to ſet vpon the *Rebels*. In which *Counſell* the King himſelfe (whoſe continuall vigilancie did ſucke in ſometimes cauſeleſſe ſuſpicions, which few elſe knew) inclined to the accelerating a *Battaile*. But this was preſently put out of doubt, by the great aides that came in to him in the inſtant of this Conſultation, partly vpon *Miſſiues*, and partly *Voluntaries* from many parts of the Kingdome.

The principall perſons that came then to the Kings aide, were the *Earle* of *Shrewesburie*, and the Lord STRANGE, of the *Nobilitie*: and of *Knights* and *Gentlemen* to the number of at leaſt threeſcore and tenne perſons, with their Companies, making in the whole, at the leaſt ſix thouſand fighting men, beſides the *Forces* that were with the King before. Whereupon the King, finding his Armie ſo brauely re-enforced, and a great alacritie in all his men to fight, was confirmed in his former reſolution, and marched ſpeedily, ſo as hee put himſelfe betweene the Enimies *Campe* and *Newarke*; being loath their Armie ſhould get the commoditie of that Towne. The *Earle* nothing diſmayed, came forwards that day vnto a little Village called *Stoke*, and there encamped that night, vpon the Brow or hanging of a Hill. The King the next day preſented him Battaile vpon the *Plaine*, the fields there being open and champion. The *Earle* couragiouſly came downe and ioyned Battaile with him. Concerning which *Battaile*, the relations that are left vnto vs are ſo naked, and negligent (though it be an action of ſo recent

recent memorie) as they rather declare the *Succeſſe*, of the day, then the *Manner* of the fight. They ſay, that the King diuided his Armie into three *Battailes*; whereof the *Vant-guard* onely well ſtrengthened with wings, came to fight. That the *Fight* was fierce and obſtinate, and laſted three houres, before the victorie inclined either way; ſaue that Iudgement might be made, by that the Kings *Vant-guard* of it ſelfe maintained fight againſt the whole *Power* of the Enimies, (the other two *Battailes* remaining out of action) what the ſucceſſe was like to bee in the end. That MARTIN SWART with his *Germanes* performed brauely; and ſo did thoſe few *Engliſh* that were on that ſide, neither did the *Iriſh* faile in courage or fierceneſſe, but being almoſt naked men, only armed with *Darts* and *Skeines*, it was rather an *Execution*, then a *Fight* vpon them; inſomuch as the furious ſlaughter of them was a great diſcouragement and appalement to the reſt; That there died vpon the place all the *Chiefetaines*; That is, the *Earle* of *Lincolne* the *Earle* of *Kildare*, FRANCIS Lord LOVEL, MARTIN SWART, and Sir THOMAS BROVGHTON; all making good the fight without any ground giuen. Onely of the Lord LOVEL there went a report, that he fled and ſwam ouer *Trent* on horſebacke, but could not recouer the further ſide, by reaſon of the ſteepneſſe of the Banke, and ſo was drowned in the *Riuer*. But another *Report* leaues him not there, but that he liued long after in a Caue or Vault. The number that was ſlaine in the field, was of the *Enimies* part, foure thouſand at the leaſt; and of the *Kings* part, one hal'e of his *Vant-guard*, beſides many hurt, but none of name. There were taken priſoners amongſt others, the *Counterfeit* PLANTAGENET (now, LAMBERT SIMNELL againe) and the craftie *Prieſt* his *Tutor*. For LAMBERT, the King

would not take his life, both out of Magnanimitie; taking him but as an *Image* of *Wax*, that others had tempered and moulded; and likewiſe out of Wiſedome, thinking that if he ſuffered death, he would be forgotten too ſoone; but being kept aliue he would be a continuall *Spectacle*, and a kind of remedie againſt the like *Inchantments* of *People*, in time to come. For which cauſe he was taken into ſeruice in his *Court* to a baſe office in his *Kitchin*; ſo that (in a kind of *Mattacina* of humane fortune) Hee turned a *Broach*, that had worne a *Crowne*. Whereas Fortune commonly doth not bring in a *Comedie* or *Farce* after a *Tragedy*. And afterwards hee was preferred to be one of the Kings *Falconers*. As to the *Prieſt*, he was committed *Cloſe-priſoner*, and heard of no more; the King louing to ſeale vp his owne dangers.

After the *Battaile*, the King went to *Lincolne*, where he cauſed *Supplications* and *Thankeſgiuings* to be made for his Deliuerance and Victorie. And that his Deuotions might goe round in *Circle*, he ſent his *Banner* to bee offered to our Ladie of *Walſingham*, where before he made his *Vows*. And thus deliuered of this ſo ſtrange an *Engine* & new *Inuention* of Fortune, he returned to his former confidence of minde, thinking now, that all his misfortunes had come at once. But it fell out vnto him according to the *Speech* of the *Common people* in the beginning of his raigne, that ſaid; *It was a token he ſhould raigne in labour, becauſe his raigne began with a ſickeneſſe of Sweat*. But howſoeuer the King thought him ſelfe now in a *Hauen*, yet ſuch was his wiſdome, as his *Confidence* did ſeldome darken his *Fore-ſight*, eſpeciallyin things neare hand. And therefore awakened by ſo freſh, and vnexpected dangers, hee entred into due conſideration, aſwell how to weed out the *Partakers* of the former *Rebellion*, as to kill the *Seeds* of the like in time to come:

and

and withall to take away all *Shelters* and *Harbours* for diſcontented *Perſons*, where they might hatch and foſter *Rebellions*, which afterwards might gather ſtrength and motion. And firſt, he did yet againe make a *Progreſſe* from *Lincolne* to the *Northerne Parts*, though it were indeed rather an *Itinerarie Circuit* of *Iuſtice*, then a *Progreſſe*. For all along as he went, with much ſeueritie and ſtrict inquiſition, partly by *Martiall Law*, and partly by *Commiſsion*, were puniſhed, the *Adherents*, and *Ayders* of the late *Rebels*. Not all by death, (for the Field had drawne much bloud) but by *Fines* and *Ranſomes* which ſpared *Life*, and raiſed *Treaſure*. Amongſt other Crimes of this nature, there was diligent Inquirie made of ſuch as had raiſed and diſperſed a bruit and rumour, a little before the Field fought, *That the Rebels had the day; and that the Kings Armie was ouerthrowne, and the King fled.* Whereby it was ſuppoſed that many Succours, which otherwiſe would haue come vnto the King, were cunningly put of, and kept backe. Which *Charge* and *Accuſation*, though it had ſome ground, yet it was induſtriouſly embraced and put on by diuers, who hauing beene in themſelues not the beſt affected to the Kings part, nor forward to come to his aide, were glad to apprehend this colour, to couer their neglect and coldneſſe, vnder the pretenee of ſuch diſcouragements. Which cunning neuertheleſſe, the King would not vnderſtand, though he lodged it, and noted it in ſome particulars, as his manner was.

But for the extirpating of the Rootes and cauſes of the like *Commotions* in time to come, the King began to find where his Shooe did wring him, and that it was his depreſſing of the *Houſe* of YORKE, that did ranckle and feſter the affections of his People. And therefore being now too wiſe to diſdaine perils any longer, and willing to giue ſome contentment in

that

that kind (at leaſt in *Ceremonie*) he reſolued at laſt to proceed to the *Coronation* of his *Queene*. And therefore at his comming to *London*, where he entred in State, and in a kind of *Triumph*, and celebrated his *Victorie*, with two dayes of Deuotion, (for the firſt day he repaired to *Paules*, and had the *Hymne* of *Te Deum* ſung, and the morrow after he went in *Proceſsion*, and heard the Sermon at the *Croſſe*) the *Queene* was with great ſolemnitie crowned at *Weſtminſter*, the fiue and twentieth of *Nouember*, in the third yeare of his raigne, which was about two yeares after the marriage; *Like an old Chriſtning, that had ſtayed long for Godfathers*. Which ſtrange and vnvſuall diſtance of time, made it ſubiect to euery mans note, that it was an Act againſt his ſtomacke, and put vpon him by neceſsitie and reaſon of *State*. Soone after, to ſhew that it was now faire weather againe, and that the impriſonment of THOMAS *Marqueſſe Dorſet*, was rather vpon ſuſpicion of the Time, then of the Man, hee the ſaid *Marqueſſe* was ſet at libertie without examination, or other circumſtance. At that time alſo the King ſent an *Ambaſſadour* vnto *Pope* INNOCENT, ſignifying vnto him this his Marriage; and that now (like another ÆNEAS) he had paſſed through the flouds of his former troubles and trauailes, and was arriued vnto a ſafe *Hauen*: and thanking his *Holineſſe*, that he had honoured the Celebration of his Marriage with the preſence of his *Ambaſſadour*: and offering both his *Perſon* and the forces of his *Kingdome* vpon all occaſions to doe him ſeruice.

The *Ambaſſadour* making his Oration to the *Pope*, in the preſence of the *Cardinals*, did ſo magnifie the *King* and *Queene*, as was enough to glut the Hearers. But then he did againe ſo extoll and deifie the *Pope*, as made all that he had ſaid in praiſe of his *Maſter* and *Miſtreſſe*

Miſtreſſe ſeeme temperate and paſſable. But hee was very honourably entertained, and extreamely much made on by the *Pope*. Who knowing himſelfe to bee Lazie and vnprofitable to the *Chriſtian-world*, was wonderfully glad to heare that there were ſuch *Ecchoes* of him ſounding in remote parts. Hee obtained alſo of the *Pope* a very iuſt and honourable *Bull*, qualifying the *Priuiledges* of *Sanctuarie* (wherewith the King had beene extreamely gauled) in three points.

The firſt, that if any *Sanctuarie-man* did by night or otherwiſe, get out of *Sanctuarie* priuily, and commit miſchiefe and treſpaſſe, and then come in againe, hee ſhould looſe the benefit of *Sanctuarie* for euer after. The ſecond, that howſoeuer the *Perſon* of the *Sanctuarie-man* was protected from his *Creditors*, yet his Goods out of *Sanctuarie* ſhould not. The third, that if any tooke *Sanctuarie* for caſe of *Treaſon*, the King might appoint him *Keepers* to looke to him in *Sanctuarie*.

The King alſo for the better ſecuring of his eſtate, againſt mutinous and malcontented Subiects (whereof He ſaw the *Realme* was full) who might haue their refuge into *Scotland*, which was not vnder Key, as the *Ports* were; For that cauſe, rather then for any doubt of Hoſtilitie from thoſe parts, before his comming to *London* (when he was at *Newcaſtle*) had ſent a ſolemne Ambaſſage vnto IAMES the third, King of *Scotland*, to treate and conclude a peace with him. The *Ambaſſadors* were RICHARD FOXE Biſhop of *Exceſter*, and Sir RICHARD EDGCOMBE *Comptroller* of the Kings houſe, who were honourably receiued and entertained there. But the King of *Scotland* labouring of the ſame diſeaſe that King HENRY did (though more mortall, as afterwards appeared) that is, *Diſcontented Subiects*, apt to riſe, and raiſe Tumult, although in

in his owne affection hee did much deſire to make a Peace with the King; Yet finding his *Nobles* auerſe, and not daring to diſpleaſe them, concluded onely a *Truce* for ſeuen yeeres; giuing neuertheleſſe promiſe in priuate, that it ſhould bee renewed from time to time, during the two Kings liues.

HItherto the King had beene exerciſed in ſetling his affaires at home. But about this time brake forth an occaſion that drew him to looke abroad, and to harken to forraine buſineſſe. CHARLES the eight the French King, by the vertue and good fortune of his two imediate Predeceſſors, CHARLES the ſeuenth his *Grand-father*, and LEWES the eleuenth his Father, receiued the Kingdome of *France* in more flouriſhing and ſpred Eſtate, then it had beene of many yeares before; being redintegrate in thoſe principall *Members*, which anciently had beene portions of the Crowne of *France*, and were after diſſeuerd, ſo as they remained onely in *Homage*, and not in *Soueraigntie* (being gouerned by abſolute Princes of their owne) *Angeou*, *Normandy*, *Prouence*, and *Burgundie*. There remained only *Brittaine* to be revnited, and ſo the *Monarchie* of *France* to be reduced to the ancient Termes and Bounds.

King CHARLES was not a little inflamed with an ambition to repurchaſe, and reannex that *Duchie*. Which his Ambition was a wiſe and well weighed Ambition; not like vnto the ambitions of his ſucceeding enterprizes of *Italie*. For at that time being newly come to the *Crowne*, he was ſomewhat guided by his Fathers *Counſels* (*Counſels*, not *Counſellors*) for his Father was his owne *Counſell*, and had few able men about him. And that King (he knew well) had euer diſtaſted the deſignes of *Italie*, and in particular had an eye vpon *Brittaine*. There were many circumſtances

ſtances that did feed the ambition of CHARLES, with pregnant and apparant hopes of *Succeſſe*. The *Duke* of *Britaine* old, and entred into a *Lethargie*, and ſerued with *Mercenarie Counſellors*, father of two only daughters, the one ſickly and not like to continue. King CHARLES himſelfe in the flower of his age, and the Subiects of *France* at that time well trayned for Warre, both for *Leaders* and *Souldiers*; men of ſeruice being not yet worne out, ſince the warres of LEWIS againſt *Burgundie*. Hee found himſelfe alſo in peace with all his *Neighbour-Princes*. As for thoſe that might oppoſe to his enterpriſe; MAXIMILIAN King of *Romans*, his *Riuall* in the ſame deſires, (as well for the *Ducby*, as the *Daughter*) feeble in meanes; and King HENRY of *England* aſwell ſomewhat obnoxious to him for his fauours and benefits, as buſied in his particular troubles at home. There was alſo a faire and ſpecious occaſion offered him to hide his ambition, and to iuſtifie his warring vpon *Britaine*; for that the *Duke* had receiued, and ſuccoured LEWIS Duke of *Orleance*, and other of the French *Nobilitie*, which had taken Armes againſt their King. Wherefore King CHARLES being reſolued vpon that Warre, knew well he could not receiue any oppoſition ſo potent, as if King HENRY, ſhould either vpon *Policie* of *State*, in preuenting the growing greatneſſe of *France*: or vpon gratitude vnto the *Duke* of *Britaine*, for his former fauours, in the time of his diſtreſſe, eſpouſe that quarrell, and declare himſelfe in aide of the *Duke*. Therefore hee no ſooner heard that King HENRY was ſetled by his victorie, but forthwith he ſent *Ambaſſadours* vnto him, to pray his aſſiſtance, or at the leaſt that hee would ſtand neutrall. Which *Ambaſſadours* found the King at *Leiceſter*, and deliuered their *Ambaſſage* to this effect. They firſt imparted vnto the King the ſucceſſe that

their *Maſter* had had a little before againſt MAXIMILIAN, in recouerie of certaine Townes from him: which was done in a kind of priuacie, and inwardneſſe towards the King; as if the *French-King* did not eſteeme him for an outward or formall *Confederate*, but as one that had part in his affections and fortunes, and with whom he tooke pleaſure to communicate his buſineſſe. After this *Complement*, and ſome gratulation for the Kings victorie, they fell to their errand; declaring to the King, that their *Maſter* was enforced to enter into a iuſt and neceſſarie Warre with the *Duke* of *Britaine*, for that hee had receiued and ſuccoured thoſe that were *Traitors*, and Declared Enimies vnto his Perſon and *State*. That they were no meane, diſtreſſed, and calamitous *Perſons* that fled to him for refuge, but of ſo great qualitie, as it was apparant that they came not thither to protect their owne fortune, but to infeſt and inuade his; the *Head* of them being the *Duke* of *Orleance*, the firſt *Prince* of the bloud, and the ſecond Perſon of *France*. That therefore, rightly to vnderſtand it, it was rather on their *Maſters* part a *Defenſiue* Warre, then an *Offenſiue*; as that, that could not bee omitted or forborne, if he tendred the conſeruation of his owne *Eſtate*; and that it was not the firſt *Blow* that made the Warre inuaſiue, (for that no wiſe Prince would ſtay for) but the firſt *Prouocation*, or at leaſt the firſt *Preparation*. Nay that this Warre was rather a *Suppreſſion* of *Rebels*, then a Warre with a iuſt Enimie, where the caſe is; That his Subiects, *Traitors*, are receiued by the *Duke* of *Britaine* his *Homager*. That King HENRY knew well what went vpon it in example, if *Neighbour-Princes* ſhould patronize and comfort *Rebels*, againſt the *Law* of *Nations* and of *Leagues*. Neuertheleſſe that their *Maſter* was not ignorant, that the King had beene beholding to the

Duke

Duke of *Britaine* in his aduerſitie; as on the other ſide, they knew he would not forget alſo the readineſſe of their *King*, in ayding him when the *Duke* of *Britaine*, or his mercenary *Councellors* failed him, and would haue betrayed him; And that there was a great difference betweene the curteſies receiued from their *Maſter*, and the *Duke* of *Britaine*; for that the *Dukes* might haue ends of vtilitie and *Bargaine*; whereas their *Maſters* could not haue proceeded but out of entire *Affection*. For that, if it had beene meaſured by a politike line, it had beene better for his affaires, that a *Tyrant* ſhould haue raigned in *England*, troubled and hated, then ſuch a *Prince*, whoſe vertues could not faile to make him great and potent, whenſoeuer he was come to be *Maſter* of his affaires. But howſoeuer it ſtood for the point of obligation, which the *King* might owe to the *Duke* of *Britaine*, yet their *Maſter* was well aſſured, it would not diuert King HENRY of *England* from doing that, that was iuſt, nor euer embarke him in ſo ill grounded a quarrell. Therefore, ſince this Warre which their *Maſter* was now to make, was but to deliuer himſelfe from imminent dangers, their *King* hoped the *King* would ſhew the like affection to the conſeruation of their *Maſters* eſtate, as their *Maſter* had (when time was) ſhewed to the Kings acquiſition of his Kingdome. At the leaſt, that according to the inclination which the *King* had euer profeſſed of peace, he would looke on, and ſtand *Neutrall*; for that their *Maſter* could not with reaſon preſſe him to vndertake part in the Warre, being ſo newly ſetled and recouered from inteſtine ſeditions. But touching the *Myſterie* of reannexing of the *Duchy* of *Britaine* to the Crowne of *France*, either by Warre, or by marriage with the Daughter of *Britaine*; the *Ambaſſadors* bare aloofe from it, as from a *Rocke*, knowing that it made moſt againſt them. And therefore by all

meanes declined any mention thereof, but contrariwiſe interlaced in their conference with the King, the aſſured purpoſe of their *Maſter*, to match with the Daughter of MAXIMILIAN; And entertained the King alſo with ſome wandring Diſcourſes of their Kings purpoſe, to recouer by Armes his right to the Kingdome of *Naples*, by an expedition in Perſon, All to remoue the King from all iealouſie of any *Deſigne* in theſe hither Parts vpon *Britaine*, otherwiſe then for quenching of the fire, which hee feared might bee kindled in his owne eſtate.

The *King* after aduice taken with his *Counſell*, made anſwere to the *Ambaſſadors*. And firſt returned their *Complement*, ſhewing hee was right glad of the *French Kings* reception of thoſe Townes from MAXIMILIAN. Then hee familiarly related ſome particular paſſages of his owne aduentures and victorie paſſed. As to the buſineſſe of *Britaine*, the King anſwered in few words; That the *French* King and the Duke of *Britaine*, were the two perſons to whom hee was moſt obliged of all men; and that hee ſhould thinke himſelfe very vnhappie, if things ſhould goe ſo betweene them, as he ſhould not be able to acquite himſelfe ingratitude towards them both; and that there was no meanes for him as a *Chriſtian* King and a Common friend to them, to ſatisfie all obligations both to God and Man, but to offer himſelfe for a *Mediator* of an *Accord* and *Peace* betweene them; by which courſe he doubted not but their Kings eſtate and honour both, would bee preſerued with more *Safetie* and leſſe *Enuie* then by a Warre, and that hee would ſpare no coſt or paines, no if it were *To goe on Pilgrimage*, for ſo good an effect; And concluded, that in this great *Affaire*, which he tooke ſo much to heart, hee would expreſſe himſelfe more fully by an *Ambaſſage*, which he would ſpeedily diſpatch vnto the *French* King for that purpoſe.

poſe. And in this ſort the French *Ambaſſadors* were diſmiſſed; The King auoiding to vnderſtand any thing touching the re-annexing of *Britaine*, as the *Ambaſſadors* had auoided to mention it; ſaue that hee gaue a little touch of it in the word, *Enuie*. And ſo it was, that the King was neither ſo ſhallow, nor ſo ill aduertiſed, as not to perceiue the intention of the *French*, for the inueſting himſelfe of *Britaine*. But firſt, he was vtterly vnwilling (howſoeuer hee gaue out) to enter into Warre with *France*. A *Fame* of a Warre he liked well, but not an *Achieuement*; for the one hee thought would make him *Richer*, and the other *Poorer*: and he was poſſeſſed with many ſecret feares, touching his owne people, which hee was therefore loth to arme, and put weapons into their hands. Yet notwithſtanding (as a prudent and couragious *Prince*) he was not ſo auerſe from a Warre, but that he was reſolued to chooſe it, rather then to haue *Britaine* carried by *France*, being ſo great and opulent a *Duchy*, and ſcituate ſo opportunely to annoy *England*, either for *Coaſt*, or *Trade*. But the Kings hopes were, that partly by negligence, commonly imputed to the *French* (eſpecially in the *Court* of a young King) and partly by the natiue power of *Britaine* it ſelfe, which was not ſmall; But chiefely in reſpect of the great *Partie*, that the *Duke* of *Orleance* had in the Kingdome of *France*, and thereby meanes to ſtirre vp *Ciuill* troubles, to diuert the *French-king* from the enterpriſe of *Britaine*. And laſtly, in regard of the power of MAXIMILIAN, who was *Corriuall* to the *French* King in that *Purſuit*, the *Enterprize* would eyther bow to a pace, or breake in it ſelfe. In all which, the King meaſured and valued things amiſſe, as afterwards appeared. He ſent therefore forthwith to the *French* King, CHRISTOPHER VRSWICKE, his *Chaplaine*, a perſon by him much truſted and imployed: chooſing him the rather, becauſe

cauſe he was a *Church-man*, as beſt ſorting with an *Ambaſſie* of *Pacification*: and giuing him alſo a *Commiſſion*, That if the *French King* conſented to treat, hee ſhould thence repaire to the *Duke* of *Britaine*, and ripen the *Treatie* on both parts. VRSWICK made declaration to the *French King*, much to the purpoſe of the Kings anſwere to the *French Ambaſſadours* here; inſtilling alſo tenderly ſome ouerture of receiuing to grace the *Duke* of *Orleance*, and ſome taſte of Conditions of Accord. But the *French King* on the other ſide proceeded not ſincerely, but with a great deale of art and diſſimulation, in this *Treatie*; hauing for his end to gaine time, and ſo put off the *Engliſh-Succours*, vnder hope of *Peace*, till he had got good footing in *Britaine*, by force of *Armes*. Wherefore he anſwered the *Ambaſſadour*, That hee would put himſelfe into the Kings hands, and make him *Arbiter* of the Peace: and willingly conſented, that the *Ambaſſadour* ſhould ſtraightwayes paſſe into *Britaine*, to ſignifie this his conſent, and to know the *Dukes* minde likewiſe; well fore-ſeeing, that the *Duke* of *Orleance*, by whom the *Duke* of *Britaine* was wholly led, taking himſelfe to be vpon termes irreconcileable with him, would admit of no *Treatie* of Peace. Whereby hee ſhould in one, both generally abroad veyle ouer his Ambition, and winne the reputation of iuſt and moderate proceedings; and ſhould withall endeare himſelfe in the Affections of the *King* of *England*, as one, that had committed all to his Will: Nay, and (which was yet more fine) make Faith in him, That although he went on with the Warre, yet it ſhould be but with his *Sword* in his hand, to bend the ſtiffeneſſe of the other party to accept of Peace: and ſo the *King* ſhould take no vmbrage of his arming and proſecution; but the *Treatie* to be kept on foot, to the very laſt inſtant, till hee were *Maſter* of the *Field*.

Which

Which grounds being by the *French King* wiſely laid, all things fell out as he expected. For when the *Engliſh Ambaſſadour* came to the Court of *Britaine*, the *Duke* was then ſcarcely perfect in his memorie, and all things were directed by the *Duke* of *Orleance*; who gaue audience to the *Chaplaine* VRSWICK, and vpon his *Ambaſſage* deliuered, made anſwere in ſomewhat high termes: That the *Duke* of *Britaine* hauing beene an *Hoſte*, and a kind of *Parent* or *Foſter-father* to the King, in his tenderneſſe of age, and weakneſſe of fortune, did looke for at this time from King HENRY (the renowned King of *England*) rather braue *Troupes* for his Succours, then a vaine *Treatie* of Peace. And if the King could forget the good Offices of the *Duke* done vnto him aforetime; yet he knew well, he would in his wiſdome conſider of the future, how much it imported his owne ſafetie, and reputation, both in forraine parts, and with his owne people, not to ſuffer *Britaine* (the old *Confederates* of *England*) to be ſwallowed vp by *France*, and ſo many good *Ports*, and ſtrong *Townes* vpon the *Coaſt*, be in the command of ſo potent a *Neighbour-King*, and ſo ancient an *Enemie*. And therefore humbly deſired the King to thinke of this buſineſſe as his owne; and therewith brake of, and denyed any further conference for *Treatie*.

VRSWICK returned firſt to the *French King*, and related to him what had paſſed. Who finding things to ſort to his deſire, tooke hold of them, and ſaid; That the *Ambaſſadour* might perceiue now, that which he for his part, partly imagined before. That conſidering in what hands the *Duke* of *Britaine* was, there would be no *Peace*, but by a mixt *Treatie* of force and perſwaſion. And therefore he would goe on with the one, and deſired the *King* not to deſiſt from the other. But for his owne part, he did faithfully promiſe, to bee ſtill in the Kings power, to rule him

him in the matter of Peace. This was accordingly repreſented vnto the *King* by VRSWICK at his returne, and in ſuch a faſhion, as if the *Treatie* were in no ſort deſperate, but rather ſtayed for a better houre, till the *Hammer* had wrought, and bett the *Partie* of *Britaine* more pliant. Whereupon there paſſed continually *Packets* and *Diſpatches* betweene the two *Kings*, from the *One* out of *deſire*, and from the other out of *diſſimulation*, about the negotiation of Peace. The *French King* meanewhile inuaded *Brittaine* with great forces, and diſtreſſed the Citie of *Nantes* with a ſtrait ſiege, and (as one, who though hee had no great Iudgement, yet had that, that hee could diſſemble home) the more he did vrge the proſecution of the *Warre*, the more he did at the ſame time, vrge the ſolicitation of the *Peace*. Inſomuch as during the ſiege of *Nantes*, after many Letters and particular meſſages, the better to maintaine his diſſimulation, and to refreſh the *Treatie*; he ſent BERNARD DAVBIGNEY (a perſon of good qualitie) to the King, earneſtly to deſire him, to make an end of the buſineſſe howſoeuer.

The King was no leſſe readie to reuiue and quicken the *Treatie*; And thereupon ſent three *Commiſſioners*, the *Abbot* of *Abington*, Sir RICHARD TVNSTAL, and CHAPLEINE VRSWICK formerly imployed, to doe their vtmoſt endeauours, to manage the *Treatie* roundly and ſtrongly.

About this time the Lord WOODVILE, (Vncle to the *Queene*) a valiant gentleman, & deſirous of honor, ſued to the King, that he might raiſe ſome *Power* of *Voluntaries* vnder-hand, and without licence or paſſport (wherein the King might any wayes appeare) goe to the ayde of the *Duke* of *Britaine*. The King denied his requeſt, (or at leaſt ſeemed ſo to doe) and layed ſtrait commaundement vpon him, that hee ſhould

ſhould not ſtirre, for that the King thought his honour would ſuffer therein, during a *Treatie*, to better a *Partie*. Neuertheleſſe this *Lord* (either beeing vnruly, or out of conceipt that the King would not inwardly diſlike that, which he would not openly auow) ſailed ſecretly ouer into the Iſle of *Wight*, whereof hee was *Gouernour*, and leuied a faire *Troupe* of foure hundred men, and with them paſſed ouer into *Brittaine*, and ioyned himſelfe with the *Dukes* Forces. The Newes whereof when it came to the *French Court*, put diuers *young Bloods* into ſuch a furie, as the *Engliſh Ambaſſadors* were not without perill to bee outraged. But the *French King* both to preſerue the priuiledge of *Ambaſſadors*, and being conſcious to himſelfe, that in the buſineſſe of Peace, hee himſelfe was the greater diſſembler of the two, forbad all iniuries of fact or word, againſt their Perſons, or Followers. And preſently came an *Agent* from the King, to purge himſelfe touching the Lord WOODVILES going ouer, vſing for a principall argument, to demonſtrate that it was without his priuitie, for that the *Troupes* were ſo ſmall, as neither had the *Face* of a ſuccour by authoritie, nor could much aduance the *Brittaine* affaires. To which meſſage, although the *French King* gaue no full credit, yet he made faire weather with the King, and ſeemed ſatisfied. Soone after the *Engliſh Ambaſſadors* returned, hauing two of them beene likewiſe with the *Duke* of *Britaine*, and found things in no other termes, then they were before. Vpon their returne, they informed the King of the ſtate of the affaires, and how farre the *French King* was from any true meaning of Peace; and therefore he was now to aduiſe of ſome other courſe. Neither was the King himſelfe lead all this while with credulity meerly, as was generally ſuppoſed: But his Error was not ſo much facility of beliefe, as an ill meaſuring of the forces of the other *Partie*.

For (as was partly touched before) the King had caſt the buſineſſe thus with himſelfe. He tooke it for granted in his owne iudgement, that the Warre of *Britaine*, in reſpect of the ſtrength of the *Townes*, and of the *Partie*, could not ſpeedily come to a *Period*. For hee conceiued that the Counſels of a Warre, that was vndertaken by the *French King*, then childleſſe, againſt an *Heire-apparant* of *France*, would bee very faint and ſlow. And beſides, that it was not poſſible, but that the ſtate of *France* ſhould be imbroiled with ſome troubles and alterations in fauour of the *Duke* of *Orleance*. Hee conceiued likewiſe, that MAXIMILIAN, King of the *Romans*, was a Prince warlike and potent; who (he made account) would giue ſuccours to the *Britaines* roundly. So then iudging it would be a worke of *Time*, hee laid his plot, how hee might beſt make vſe of that *Time*, for his own affaires. Wherein firſt hee thought to make his vantage vpon his *Parliament*; knowing that they being affectionate vnto the quarrell of *Britaine*, would giue treaſure largely. Which treaſure, as a noiſe of Warre might draw forth; ſo a peace ſucceeding might cofer vp. And becauſe hee knew his people were hot vpon the buſineſſe, hee choſe rather to ſeeme to bee deceiued, and lulled aſleepe by the *French*, then to bee backward in himſelfe; conſidering his *Subiects* were not ſo fully capable of the reaſons of *State*, which made him hold backe. Wherefore to all theſe purpoſes hee ſaw no other expedient, then to ſet and keepe on foot a continuall *Treatie* of *Peace*; laying it downe, and taking it vp againe, as the occurrence required. Beſides, he had in conſideration the point of Honour, in bearing the bleſſed perſon of a *Pacificator*. Hee thought likewiſe to make vſe of the Enuie, that the *French King* met with, by occaſion of this Warre of *Britaine*, in ſtrengthening himſelfe with new allian-

ces,

ces; as namely that of FERDINANDO of *Spaine*, with whom he had euer a conſent euen in nature and cuſtomes, and likewiſe with MAXIMILIAN, who was particularly intereſſed. So that in ſubſtance hee promiſed himſelfe Money, Honour, Friends, and Peace in the end. But thoſe things were too fine to be fortunate, and ſucceed in all parts; for that great affaires are commonly too rough and ſtubborne to bee wrought vpon by the finer edges, or points of wit. The King was likewiſe deceiued in his two maine grounds. For although he had reaſon to conceiue, that the *Councel* of *France* wold be wary to put the King into a Warre againſt the *Heire-apparant* of *France*; yet hee did not conſider, that CHARLES was not guided by any of the principall of the *Bloud* or *Nobilitie*, but by meane Men, who would make it their *Maſter-piece* of Credite and Fauour, to giue venturous Counſels, which no great or wiſe Man durſt, or would. And for MAXIMILIAN, he was thought then a *Greater-matter* then hee was; his vnſtable and neceſſitous Courſes being not then knowne.

After Conſultation with the *Ambaſſadors*, who brought him no other newes, then hee expected before (though he would not ſeeme to know it till then) he preſently ſummoned his *Parliament*, and in open *Parliament* propounded the cauſe of *Britaine* to both *Houſes*, by his *Chancellor* MORTON *Arch-biſhop* of *Canterburie*, who ſpake to this effect.

MY Lords and Maſters, the Kings Grace, our Soueraigne Lord, hath commanded me to declare vnto you the cauſes, that haue moued him at this time to ſummon this his Parliament; which I ſhall doe in few words,

crauing pardon of his Grace, and you all, if I performe it not as I would.

His Grace doth firſt of all let you know, that he retaineth in thankefull memorie the loue and loyaltie ſhewed to him by you, at your laſt Meeting, in eſtabliſhment of his Royaltie; freeing and diſcharging of his partakers, and confiſcation of his Traytors and Rebels: more then which could not come from Subiects to their Soueraigne, in one Action. This he taketh ſo well at your hands, as he hath made it a Reſolution to himſelfe, to communicate with ſo louing and well approued Subiects, in all Affaires that are of publike nature, at home, or abroad.

Two therefore are the cauſes of your preſent aſſembling: the one, a forraine Buſineſſe; the other, matter of Gouernment at home.

The French King *(as no doubt yee haue heard) maketh at this preſent hot Warre vpon the* Duke *of* Britaine. *His Armie is now before* Nantes, *and holdeth it ſtraitly beſieged, being the principall Citie (if not in Ceremonie and Prehéminence, yet in Strength and Wealth) of that* Duchie. *Yee may gueſſe at his Hopes, by his attempting of the hardeſt part of the Warre firſt. The cauſe of this Warre he knoweth beſt. Hee alledgeth the entertayning and ſuccouring of the* Duke *of* Orleance, *and*

ſome

ſome other French *Lords, whom the King taketh for his Enemies. Others diuine of other Matters. Both parts haue by their* Ambaſſadours *diuers times prayed the Kings Aides: The* French King *Aides, or Neutralitie; the* Britons *Aides ſimply; for ſo their caſe requireth. The King, as a Chriſtian Prince, and bleſſed Sonne of the Holy Church, hath offered himſelfe as a Mediator, to treat a Peace betweene them. The* French King *yeeldeth to treat, but will not ſtay the proſecution of the Warre. The* Britons, *that deſire Peace moſt, hearken to it leaſt: not vpon confidence or ſtiffeneſſe, but vpon diſtruſt of true meaning, ſeeing the Warre goes on. So as the King, after as much paines and care to affect a Peace, as euer he tooke in any Buſineſſe, not being able to remoue the Proſecution on the one ſide, nor the Diſtruſt on the other, cauſed by that Proſecution, hath let fall the* Treatie; *not repenting of it, but deſparing of it now, as not likely to ſucceed. Therefore by this Narratiue you now vnderſtand the ſtate of the Queſtion, whereupon the King prayeth your aduice: which is no other, but whether hee ſhall enter into an auxiliarie and defenſiue Warre for the* Britons *againſt* France.

And the better to open your vnderſtandings

in

in this Affaire, the King hath commanded mee to ſay ſomewhat to you from him, of the Perſons that doe interuene in this Buſineſſe; and ſomewhat of the Conſequence thereof, as it hath relation to this Kingdome; and ſomewhat of the Example of it in generall: making neuertheleſſe no Concluſion or Iudgement of any Point, vntill his Grace hath receiued your faithfull and politique aduices.

Firſt, for the King our Soueraigne himſelfe, who is the principall Perſon you are to eye in this Buſineſſe; his Grace doth profeſſe, that he truly and conſtantly deſireth to raigne in Peace. But his Grace ſaith, he will neither buy Peace with Diſhonour, nor take it vp at Intereſt of Danger to enſue; but ſhall thinke it a good Change, if it pleaſe God to change the inward Troubles and Seditions, wherewith he hath beene hitherto exerciſed, into an honourable Forraigne Warre. And for the other two Perſons in this Action, the French King, *and the* Duke *of* Britaine, *his Grace doth declare vnto you, that they be the Men, vnto whom he is of all other Friends and Allies moſt bounden: the One hauing held ouer him his hand of Protection from the Tyrant: the Other hauing reacht forth vnto him his hand of helpe, for the recouerie of his Kingdome. So that his affection toward them in his natu-*

rall

rall Perſon, is vpon equall termes. And whereas you may haue heard, that his Grace was enforced to flye out of Britaine into France, for doubts of being betrayed; his Grace would not in any ſort haue that reflect vpon the Duke of Britaine, in defacement of his former benefits: for that hee is throughly informed, that it was but the practiſe of ſome corrupt Perſons about him, during the time of his ſickneſſe, altogether without his conſent or priuitie.

But howſoeuer theſe things doe intereſſe his Grace in his particular, yet hee knoweth well, that the higher Bond that tyeth him to procure by all meanes the ſafetie and welfare of his louing Subiects, doth diſ-intereſſe him of theſe Obligations of Gratitude, otherwiſe then thus: that if his Grace be forced to make a Warre, he doe it without paſſion, or ambition.

For the Conſequence of this Action towards this Kingdome, it is much as the French Kings intention is. For if it be no more, but to range his Subiects to reaſon, who beare themſelues ſtout vpon the ſtrength of the Duke of Britaine, it is nothing to vs. But if it be in the French Kings purpoſe, or if it ſhould not be in his purpoſe, yet if it ſhall follow all one, as if it were ſought, that the French King ſhall make a Prouince of Britaine, and ioyne it to the Crowne

Crowne of France: then is is worthy the conſideration, how this may import England, as well in the increaſement of the greatneſſe of France, by the addition of ſuch a Countrey, that ſtretcheth his Boughes vnto our Seas, as in depriuing this Nation, and leauing it naked of ſo firme and aſſured Confederates, as the Britons haue alwayes beene. For then it will come to paſſe, that whereas not long ſince, this Realme was mightie vpon the Continent, firſt in Territorie, and after in Alliance, in reſpect of Burgundie and Britaine, which were Confederates indeed, but dependant Confederates; now the one being already caſt, partly into the greatneſſe of France, and partly into that of Auſtria, the other is like wholly to be caſt into the greatneſſe of France, and this Iſland ſhall remaine confined in effect within the ſalt Waters, and girt about with the Coaſt-Countries of two mightie Monarchs.

For the Example, it reſteth likewiſe vpon the ſame Queſtion, vpon the French Kings intent. For if Britaine be carried and ſwallowed vp by France, as the World abroad (apt to impute and conſtrue the Actions of Princes to Ambition) conceiue it will; then it is an Example very dangerous and vniuerſall, that the leſſer Neighbour Eſtate ſhould bee deuoured of the greater. For this may be the caſe of Scotland

towards

towards England; *of* Portugall, *towards* Spaine; *of the ſmaller Eſtates of* Italie, *towards the greater: and ſo of* Germanie; *or as if ſome of you of the Commons, might not liue and dwell ſafely, beſides ſome of theſe great Lords. And the bringing in of this Example, will be chiefely laid to the Kings charge, as to him that was moſt intereſſed and moſt able to forbid it. But then on the other ſide, there is ſo faire a Pretext on the* French Kings *Part (and yet Pretext is neuer wanting to Power) in regard the Danger imminent to his owne Eſtate is ſuch, as may make this Enterpriſe ſeeme rather a Worke of Neceſſitie, then of Ambition, as doth in reaſon correct the Danger of the Example. For that the Example of that which is done in a mans owne defence, cannot be dangerous, becauſe it is in anothers power to auoid it. But in all this buſineſſe, the King remits himſelfe to your graue and mature aduiſe, whereupon he purpoſeth to relye.*

This was the effect of the Lord *Chancellors* Speech touching the Cauſe of *Britaine*: For the King had commanded him to carrie it ſo, as to affect the *Parliament* towards the Buſineſſe; but without engaging the King in any expreſſe declaration.

The *Chancellor* went on:

FOr that which may concerne the Gouern-ment at home, the King hath commanded me to ſay vnto you; That he thinketh there was neuer any King (for the ſmall time that hee hath raigned) had greater and iuſter cauſe of the two contrarie Paſſions of Joy, and Sorrow, then his Grace hath. Joy, in reſpect of the rare and viſible Fauours of Almightie God, in girting the Imperiall Sword vpon his ſide, and aſſiſting the ſame his Sword againſt all his Enemies; and likewiſe in bleſſing him with ſo many good and louing Seruants and Subiects, which haue neuer fayled to giue him faithfull Councell readie Obedience, and couragious Defence. Sorrow, for that it hath not pleaſed God to ſuffer him to ſheathe his Sword (as hee greatly deſired otherwiſe then for Adminiſtration of Juſtice) but that hee hath beene forced to draw it ſo oft, to cut off Trayterous and diſloyall Subiects, whom (it ſeemes) God hath left (a few a mongſt many good) as the Canaanites *amongſt the People of* Iſrael, *to bee Thornes in their ſides, to tempt and trie them; though the end hath beene alwayes (Gods Name bee bleſſed therefore) that the deſtruction hath fallen vpon their owne heads.*

VVherefore his Grace ſaith; That hee ſeeth, that it is not the Bloud ſpilt in the Field, that will

will ſaue the Bloud in the Citie; nor the Marſhals Sword, that will ſet this Kingdome in perfect Peace: But that the true way is, to ſtop the Seeds of Sedition and Rebellion in their beginnings; and for that purpoſe to deuiſe, confirme, and quicken good and holeſome Lawes, againſt Riots, and vnlawfull Aſſemblies of People, and all Combinations and Confederacies of them, by Liueries, Tokens, and other Badges of factious Dependance; that the Peace of the Land may by theſe Ordinances, as by Barres of Iron, bee ſoundly bound in and ſtrengthned, and all Force both in Court, Countrey, and priuate Houſes, be ſuppreſt. The care hereof, which ſo much concerneth your ſelues, and which the nature of the Times doth inſtantly call for, his Grace commends to your Wiſdomes.

And becauſe it is the Kings deſire, that this Peace, wherein he hopeth to gouerne and maintaine you, doe not beare onely vnto you Leaues for you to ſit vnder the ſhade of them in ſafetie; but alſo ſhould beare you Fruit of Riches, Wealth, and Plentie: Therefore his Grace prayes you, to take into conſideration matter of Trade, as alſo the Manufactures of the Kingdome, and to repreſſe the baſtard and barren Imployment of Moneyes, to Vſurie and vnlawfull Exchanges, that they may bee (as their natu-

rall vſe is) turned vpon Commerce, and lawfull and Royall Trading. And likewiſe, that our People bee ſet on worke in Arts and Handy-craſs; that the Realme may ſubſiſt more of it ſelfe; that Idleneſſe be auoided, and the drayning out of our Treaſure, for forraine Manufactures, ſtopped. But you are not to reſt heere onely, but to prouide further, that whatſoeuer Merchandize ſhall bee brought in from beyond the Seas, may bee imployed vpon the Commodities of this Land; whereby the Kingdomes ſtocke of Treaſure may be ſure to bee kept from being diminiſhed, by any ouer-trading of the Forrainer.

And laſtly, becauſe the King is well aſſured, that you would not haue him poore, that wiſhes you rich; he doubteth not, but that you will haue care, as well to maintaine his Reuenues of Cuſtomes, and all other Natures, as alſo to ſupply him with your louing Aides, if the caſe ſhall ſo require. The rather, for that you know the King is a good Husband, and but a Steward in effect for the Publike; and that what comes from you is but as Moiſture drawne from the Earth, which gathers into a Cloud, and falls backe vpon the Earth againe. And you know well, how the Kingdomes about you grow more and more in Greatneſſe, and the Times

are

are ſtirring; and therefore not fit to finde the King with an emptie Purſe. More I haue not to ſay to you; and wiſh, that what hath beene ſaid, had beene better expreſt: But that your Wiſdomes and good Affections will ſupply. GOD bleſſe your Doings.

IT was no hard matter to diſpoſe and affect the *Parliament* in this buſineſſe; aſwell in reſpect of the Emulation betweene the Nations, and the Enuie at the late growth of the *French Monarchie*; as in regard of the Danger, to ſuffer the *French* to make their approches vpon *England*, by obtayning ſo goodly a maritime *Prouince*, full of Sea-townes, and Hauens, that might doe miſchiefe to the *Engliſh*, either by inuaſion or by interruption of *Traffique*. The *Parliament* was alſo moued with the point of *Oppreſſion*; for although the *French* ſeemed to ſpeake reaſon, yet *Arguments* are euer with multitudes too weake for *Suſpitions*. Wherefore they did aduiſe the King, roundly to embrace the *Brittons* quarrell, and to ſend them ſpeedy aides, and with much alacritie and forwardneſſe graunted to the King a great rate of *Subſidie*, in contemplation of theſe aides. But the King both to keepe a decencie towards the *French King*, to whom he profeſt himſelfe to bee obliged, and indeede deſirous rather to ſhew Warre, then to make it; ſent new ſolemne *Ambaſſadors* to intimate vnto him, the *Decree* of his *Eſtates*, and to iterate his motion, that the *French* would deſiſt from *Hoſtilitie*; or if Warre muſt follow, to deſire him to take it in good part, if at the motion of his people, who were ſenſible of the cauſe of the *Brittons* as their ancient Friends,

Friends, and Confederates, hee did ſend them ſuccours; with proteſtation neuertheleſſe, that to ſaue all *Treaties* and *Lawes* of Friendſhip, hee had limited his *Force*, to proceed in aide of the *Britons*, but in no wiſe to wsarre vpon the *French*, otherwiſe then as they maintained the poſſeſſion of *Britaine*. But before this formall *Ambaſſage* arriued, the *Partie* of the *Duke* had receiued a great blowe, and grew to manifeſt declination. For neere the Towne of Saint *Alban* in *Britaine*, a Battaile had beene giuen, where the *Britons* were ouerthrowne, and the *Duke* of *Orleance*, and the *Prince* of *Orange* taken *Priſoners*, there being ſlaine on the *Britons* part ſixe thouſand Men, and amongſt them the *Lord* WOODVILE, and almoſt all his Souldiers, valiantly fighting. And of the *French* part, one thouſand two hundred, with their *Leader*, IAMES GALEOT, a great *Commander*.

When the newes of this Battaile came ouer into *England*, it was time for the King (who now had no ſubterfuge to continue further *Treatie*, and ſaw before his Eyes, that *Britaine* went ſo ſpeedily for loſt, contrarie to his hopes, knowing alſo that with his People and Forreiners both, he ſuſtained no ſmall Enuie and diſreputation for his former delayes) to diſpatch with all poſſible ſpeed his ſuccours into *Britaine*; which hee did vnder the conduct of ROBERT Lord BROOKE, to the number of eight thouſand choiſe Men, and well armed; who hauing a faire wind, in few houres landed in *Britaine*, and ioyned themſelues forthwith to thoſe *Briton-Forces*, that remayned after the *Defeat*, and marched ſtraight on to find the *Enemie*, and incamped faſt by them. The *French* wiſely husbanding the poſſeſſion of a *Victorie*, and well acquainted with the courage of the *Engliſh*, eſpecially when they are freſh, kept themſelues within their *Trenches*, being ſtrongly lodged, and reſolued not to giue battaile.

But

But meanewhile, to harraſſe and wearie the *Engliſh*, they did vpon all aduantages ſet vpon them with their *Light-Horſe*; wherein neuertheleſſe they receiued commonly loſſe, eſpecially by meanes of the *Engliſh-Archers*.

But vpon theſe atchieuements FRANCIS *Duke* of *Britaine* deceaſed; an accident that the King might eaſily haue foreſeene, and ought to haue reckoned vpon, and prouided for, but that the *Point* of *Reputation*, when newes firſt came of the *Battaile* loſt (that ſomewhat muſt bee done) did ouerbeare the *Reaſon of Warre*.

After the *Dukes* deceaſe, the principall perſons of *Britaine*, partly bought, partly through faction, put all things into confuſion; ſo as the *Engliſh* not finding *Head* or *Bodie* with whom to ioyne their *Forces*, and being in iealouſie of *Friends*, as well as in danger of *Enemies*, and the Winter begun, returned home fiue moneths after their landing. So the Battaile of *Saint Alban*, the death of the *Duke*, and the retire of the *Engliſh-ſuccours* were (after ſome time) the cauſes of the loſſe of that *Duchie*; which action ſome accounted as a blemiſh of the Kings Iudgement; but moſt but as the misfortune of his times.

But howſoeuer the temporarie Fruit of the *Parliament* in their aide and aduice giuen for *Britaine*, tooke not, nor proſpered not; yet the laſting Fruit of *Parliament*, which is good and holſome *Lawes*, did proſper, and doth yet continue to this day. For according to the Lord *Chancelours* admonition, there were that *Parliament* diuers excellent Lawes ordained, concerning the *Points* which the King recommended.

Firſt, the authoritie of the *Star-chamber*, which before ſubſiſted by the ancient *Common-Lawes* of the *Realme*, was confirmed in certaine *Caſes* by *Act* of *Parlia-*

Parliament. This *Court* is one of the ſageſt and nobleſt *Inſtitutions* of this Kingdome. For in the diſtribution of *Courts* of *Ordinarie Iuſtice* (beſides the *High-Court* of *Parliament*) in which diſtribution the *Kings-Bench* holdeth the *Pleas* of the *Crowne*, the *Common-Place* *Pleas Ciuill*, the *Exchequer Pleas* concerning the Kings *Reuenue*, and the *Chancery* the *Pretorian* power for mittigating the *Rigour* of *Law*, in caſe of extremitie, by the conſcience of a good man; there was neuertheleſſe alwaies reſerued a high and preheminent power to the *Kings Councell*, in *Cauſes* that might in example, or conſequence, concerne the ſtate of the *Commonwealth*, which if they were *Criminall*, the *Councell* vſed to ſit in the *Chamber*, called the *Star-chamber*; if *Ciuill*, in the *White-chamber*, or *White-hall*. And as the *Chancerie* had the *Pretorian* power for *Equitie*; ſo the *Star-chamber* had the *Cenſorian* power for *Offences*, vnder the degree of *Capitall*. This *Court* of *Star-chamber* is compounded of good Elements; for it conſiſteth of foure kinds of *Perſons*; *Councellors*, *Peeres*, *Prelates*, and *Chiefe-Iudges*. It diſcerneth alſo principally of foure kinds of *Cauſes*; *Forces*, *Frauds*, *Crimes* various of *Stellionate*, and the *Inchoations* or middle Acts towards *Crimes Capitall*, or hainous, not actually committed or perpetrated. But that which was principally aimed at by this Act was *Force*, and the two chiefe *Supports* of *Force*, *Combination* of multitudes, and *Maintenance* or Headſhip of great *Perſons*.

From the generall peace of the *Countrie*, the Kings care went on to the peace of the *Kings Houſe*, and the ſecuritie of his great *Officers* and *Councellors*. But this *Law* was ſomwhat of a ſtrange compoſition and temper. That if any of the Kings ſeruants vnder the degree of a *Lord*, doe conſpire the death of any of the *Kings Councell*, or *Lord* of the *Realme*, it is made *Capitall*. This *Law* was thought to bee procured by the *Lord Chan-*

Chancellor, who being a ſterne and haughtie man, and finding he had ſome mortall Enemies in *Court*, prouided for his owne ſafetie; drowning the enuie of it in a generall *Law*, by communicating the priuiledge with all other *Councellors* and *Peeres*, and yet not daring to extend it further, then to the Kings ſeruants in *Checkrowle*, leaſt it ſhould haue beene too harſh to the *Gentlemen*, and other *Commons* of the Kingdome; who might haue thought their ancient *Libertie*, and the clemencie of the *Lawes* of *England* inuaded, *If the will in any caſe of Felonie ſhould be made the deed.* And yet the reaſon which the Act yeeldeth (that is to ſay, *That hee that conſpireth the death of Councellors may bee thought indirectly, and by a meane, to conſpire the death of the King himſelfe*) is indifferent to all *Subiects*, aſwell as to *Seruants* in *Court*. But it ſeemeth this ſufficed to ſerue the *Lord Chancellors* turne at this time. But yet hee liued to neede a *Generall Law*, for that hee grew afterwards as odious to the *Countrie*, as hee was then to the *Court*.

From the peace of the Kings Houſe, the Kings care extended to the peace of *Priuate Houſes* and *Families*. For there was an excellent Morall *Law* moulded thus; The taking and carrying away of *Women* forcibly, and againſt their will (except *Female-Wards* and *Bond-women*) was made Capitall. The *Parliament* wiſely and iuſtly conceiuing, that the obtayning of *Women* by force into *Poſſeſsion* (howſoeuer afterwards Aſſent might follow by Allurements) was but a *Rape* drawne forth in length, becauſe the firſt *Force* drew on all the reſt.

There was made alſo another *Law* for *Peace* in generall, and repreſſing of *Murthers* and *Man-ſlaughters*, and was in amendment of the *Common Lawes* of the *Realme*, being this: That whereas by the *Common Law*, the *Kings-ſuit* in caſe of *Homicide*, did expect *The*

yeare and the day, allowed to the *Parties Suit* by way of *Appeale*; and that it was found by experience, that the *Partie* was many times compounded with, and many times wearied with the *Suit*, ſo that in the end ſuch Suit was let fall, and by that time the matter was in a manner forgotten, and thereby *Proſecution* at the *Kings ſuit* by *Indictment* (which is euer beſt, *Flagrante crimine*) neglected; it was ordained, That the *Suit* by *Indictment* might bee taken as well at any time within the *yeare* and the *day*, as after, not preiudicing neuertheleſſe the *Parties Suit*.

The King began alſo then, as well in *Wiſdome* as in *Iuſtice*, to pare a little the *Priuiledge* of *Clergie*, ordayning, *That Clarkes conuict ſhould bee burned in the hand*; both becauſe they might taſte of ſome corporall puniſhment, and that they might carry a *Brand* of infamie. But for this good Acts ſake, the King himſelfe was after branded by PERKINS Proclamation, for an execrable breaker of the Rites of *Holy Church*.

Another *Law* was made for the better Peace of the *Countrey*; by which *Law*, the Kings *Officers* and *Farmors* were to forfeit their Places and Holds, in caſe of vnlawfull *Retainer*, or partaking in *Routs* and vnlawful Aſſemblies.

Theſe were the *Lawes* that were made for repreſſing of Force, which thoſe times did chiefely require; and were ſo prudently framed, as they are found fit for all ſucceeding times, and ſo continue to this day.

There were alſo made good and politike *Lawes* that *Parliament* againſt *Vſurie*, which is the *Baſtard vſe* of Money; And againſt vnlawfull *Chieuances* and *Exchanges*, which is *Baſtard Vſurie*; And alſo for the ſecuritie of the *Kings Cuſtomes*; And for the imployment of the *Procedures* of Forraine Commodities, brought in by *Merchant-ſtrangers*, vpon the Natiue Commodities of the *Realme*; Together with ſome other *Lawes* of leſſe importance.

But

But howſoeuer the *Lawes* made in that *Parliament* did beare good and holeſome Fruit; yet the *Subſidie* granted at the ſame time, bare a Fruit, that proued harſh and bitter. All was inned at laſt into the Kings Barne; but it was after a *Storme*. For when the *Commiſſioners* entred into the Taxation of the *Subſidie* in *Yorkeſhire*, and the *Biſhopricke* of *Dureſme*; the people vpon a ſudaine grew into great mutinie, aud ſaide openly, that they had endured of late yeares a thouſand miſeries, and neither could nor would pay the *Subſidie*. This (no doubt) proceeded not ſimply of any preſent neceſſitie, but much by reaſon of the old humour of thoſe Countries, where the memorie of King RICHARD was ſo ſtrong, that it lay like *Lees* in the bottome of mens hearts; and if the *Veſſell* was but ſtirred, it would come vp. And (no doubt) it was partly alſo by the inſtigation of ſome factious *Malcontents*, that bare principall ſtroke amongſt them. Hereupon the *Commiſſioners* being ſomewhat aſtoniſhed, deferred the matter vnto the *Earle* of *Northumberland*, who was the principall man of Authoritie in thoſe Parts. The *Earle* forthwith wrote vnto the *Court*, ſignifying to the King plainely enough in what flame hee found the people of thoſe Countries, and praying the Kings direction. The King wrote backe peremptorily, That hee would not haue one penny abated, of that which had beene granted to him by *Parliament*; both becauſe it might encourage other Countries, to pray the like *Releaſe*, or Mitigation; and chiefely, becauſe hee would neuer endure, that the baſe *Multitude* ſhould fruſtrate the Authoritie of the *Parliament*, wherein their *Votes* and Conſents were concluded. Vpon this diſpatch from Court, the *Earle* aſſembled the principall *Iuſtices* and *Free-holders* of the Countrey; and ſpeaking to them in that imperious Language wherein the King had written to him,

which needed not (ſaue that an *Harſh-buſineſſe* was vnfortunately fallen into the hands of a *Harſh-man*) did not onely irritate the People, but make them conceiue, by the ſtoutneſſe and haughtineſſe of deliuerie of the Kings Errand; that himſelfe was the Author or principall Perſwader of that Councell. Whereupon the meaner ſort routed together, and ſuddenly aſſayling the *Earle* in his Houſe, ſlew him, and diuers of his ſeruants. And reſted not there, but creating for their Leader Sir IOHN EGREMOND, a factious perſon, and one that had of a long time borne an ill *Talent* towards the King; and being animated alſo by a baſe Fellow, called IOHN A CHAMBER, a very *Boutefeu*, who bare much ſway amongſt the vulgar and popular, entred into open *Rebellion*; and gaue out in flat termes, that they would goe àgainſt King HENRY, and fight with him for the maintenance of their *Liberties*.

When the King was aduertiſed of this new *Inſurrection* (being almoſt a *Feuer*, that tooke him euery yeare) after his manner little troubled therewith, hee ſent THOMAS *Earle* of *Surrey* (whom hee had a little before not onely releaſed out of the Tower, and pardoned, but alſo receiued to ſpeciall fauour) with a competent Power againſt the *Rebels*; who fought with the principall Band of them, and defeated them, and tooke aliue IOHN A CHAMBER, their firebrand. As for Sir IOHN EGREMOND, hee fled into *Flanders*, to the Ladie MARGARET of *Burgundie*; whoſe Palace was the *Sanctuarie* and Receptacle of all Traitors againſt the King. IOHN A CHAMBER was executed at *Yorke*, in great ſtate; for he was hanged vpon a Gibbet raiſed a Stage higher in the midſt of a ſquare *Gallowes*, as a *Traitor Paramount*; And a number of his men that were his chiefe *Complices*, were hanged vpon the lower Storie round about

about him; and the reſt were generally pardoned. Neither did the King himſelfe omit his cuſtome, to be firſt or ſecond in all his warlike Exploits; making good his Word, which was vſuall with him when hee heard of *Rebels*; that *He deſired but to ſee them.* For immediatly after he had ſent downe the *Earle* of *Surrey*, hee marched towards them himſelfe in perſon, And although in his Iourney hee heard newes of the Victorie, yet hee went on as farre as *Yorke*, to pacifie and ſettle thoſe Countries. And that done returned to *London*, leauing the *Earle* of *Surrey* for his *Lieutenant* in the *Northerne parts*, and Sir RICHARD TVNSTALL for his principall *Commiſsioner*, to leuie the *Subſidie*, whereof he did not remit a *Denier.*

About the ſame time that the King loſt ſo good a Seruant, as the *Earle* of *Northumberland*, hee loſt likewiſe a faithfull friend and Allie of IAMES the third, King of *Scotland*, by a miſerable diſaſter. For this vnfortunate *Prince*, after a long ſmother of diſcontent, and hatred of many of his *Nobilitie* and *People*, breaking forth at times into ſeditions and alterations of *Court*, was at laſt diſtreſſed by them, hauing taken Armes, and ſurpriſed the perſon of *Prince* IAMES his ſonne, partly by force, partly by threats, that they would otherwiſe deliuer vp the Kingdome to the King of *England*, to ſhadow their Rebellion, and to bee the titular and painted Head of thoſe Armes. Whereupon the King (finding himſelfe too weake) ſought vnto King HENRY, as alſo vnto the *Pope*, and the King of *France*, to compoſe thoſe troubles, betweene him and his Subiects. The Kings accordingly interpoſed their Meditation in a round and Princely manner: Not only by way of requeſt and perſwaſion, but alſo by way of proteſtation of menace; declaring, that they thought it to be the common Cauſe of all Kings, *If Subiects ſhould be ſuffered to giue Lawes*

vnto

vnto their Soueraigne; and that they would accordingly reſent it, and reuenge it. But the *Rebels* that had ſhaken off the greater *Yoke* of Obedience, had likewiſe caſt away the leſſer *Tye* of Reſpect. And *Furie* preuayling aboue *Feare*, made anſwere, That there was no talking of Peace, except the King would reſigne his Crowne. Whereupon (Treatie of Accord taking no place) it came to a *Battaile*, at *Bannocks-Bourne* by *Striuelin*. In which Battaile the King tranſported with wrath and iuſt indignation, inconſiderately fighting and precipitating the charge, before his whole numbers came vp to him, was (notwithſtanding the contrarie expreſſe aud ſtrait commandement of the *Prince* his ſonne) ſlaine in the Purſuit, being fled to a Mill, ſcituate in the field, where the Battaile was fought.

As for the *Popes* Ambaſſie, which was ſent by ADRIAN DE CASTELLO an *Italian Legate* (and perhaps as thoſe times were might haue preuailed more) it came too late for the *Ambaſſie*, but not for the *Ambaſſador*. For paſſing through *England*, and being honourably entertained, and receiued of King HENRY; (who euer applied himſelfe with much reſpect to the *See* of *Rome*) hee fell into great grace with the King, and great familiaritie and friendſhip with MORTON the *Chancellor*. In ſo much as the King taking a liking to him, and finding him to his minde, preferred him to the Biſhopricke of *Hereford*, and afterwards to that of *Bath* and *Wells*, and imployed him in many of his affaires of *State*, that had relation to *Rome*. Hee was a man of great learning, wiſedome, and dexteritie in buſineſſe of *State*; and hauing not long after aſcended to the degree of *Cardinall*, payde the King large tribute of his gratitude, in diligent and iudicious aduertiſement of the occurrents of *Italie*. Neuertheleſſe in the end of his time, hee was parta-

partaker of the Conſpiracie, which *Cardinall* ALPHONSO PETRVCCI, and ſome other *Cardinals* had plotted againſt the life of *Pope* LEO. And this offence in it ſelfe ſo hainous, was yet in him aggrauated by the motiue thereof, which was not malice or diſcontent, but an aſpiring minde to the *Papacie*. And in this height of impietie there wanted not an intermixture of leuitie and follie; for that (as was generally belieued) hee was animated to expect the *Papacie*, by a fatall *Mockerie*, the prediction of a *Southſayer*, which was; *That one ſhould ſucceede* Pope LEO, *whoſe name ſhould bee* ADRIAN, *an aged man of meane birth, and of great learning and wiſdome.* By which *Caracter* and figure, hee tooke himſelfe to bee deſcribed though it were fulfilled of ADRIAN the *Flemming*, ſonne of a *Dutch Brewer*, *Cardinall* of *Tortoſa*, and *Preceptor* vnto CHARLES the Fift; the ſame that not changing his *Chriſten-name*, was afterwards called ADRIAN the Sixt.

But theſe things happened in the yeare following, which was the fift of this King. But in the end of the fourth yeare the King had called againe his *Parliament*, not as it ſeemeth for any particular occaſion of *State*. But the former *Parliament* being ended ſomewhat ſodainly, in regard of the preparation for *Britaine*, the King thought hee had not remunerated his people ſufficiently with good *Lawes*, which euermore was his Retribution for Treaſure. And finding by the Inſurrection in the *North*, there was diſcontentment abroad, in reſpect of the *Subſidie*, hee thought it good to giue his Subiects yet further contentment, and comfort in that kind. Certainely his times for good *Common-wealths Lawes* did excell. So as he may iuſtly be celebrated for the beſt *Law-giuer* to this Nation, after King EDWARD the firſt. For his *Lawes* (who ſo markes them well) are deepe, and not vulgar;

gar; not made vpon the *Spurre* of a particular Occaſion for the *Preſent*, but out of Prouidence of the *Future*, to make the Eſtate of his People ſtill more and more happie; after the manner of the *Legiſlators* in ancient and Heroicall Times.

Firſt therefore he made a *Law*, ſutable to his owne Acts and Times. For as himſelfe had in his Perſon and Marriage made a finall Concord, in the great Suit and Title for the *Crowne;* ſo by this *Law* hee ſetled the like Peace and Quiet in the priuate Poſſeſſions of the Subiects. Ordayning, *That Fines thence-forth ſhould be finall, to conclude all Strangers Rights;* and that vpon *Fines* leuied, and ſolemnely proclaymed, the *Subiect* ſhould haue his time of Watch for fiue yeares after his Title accrued; which if hee fore-paſſed, his Right ſhould be bound for euer after; with ſome exception neuertheleſſe, of *Minors, Married-Women*, and ſuch incompetent Perſons.

This *Statute* did in effect but reſtore an ancient Statute of the Realme, which was it ſelfe alſo made but in affirmance of the *Common Law*. The alteration had beene by a *Statute*, commonly called the *Statute* of *Non-claime*, made in the time of EDWARD the Third. And ſurely this *Law* was a kind of *Prognoſtick* of the good Peace, which ſince his time hath (for the moſt part) continued in this Kingdome, vntill this day. For *Statutes* of *Non-claime* are fit for times of Warre, when mens heads are troubled, that they cannot intend their Eſtate; But *Statutes*, that quiet *Poſſeſſions* are fitteſt for Times of Peace, to extinguiſh Suites and Contentions, which is one of the *Banes* of Peace.

Another *Statute* was made of ſingular *Policie*, for the Population apparantly, and (if it bee throughly conſidered) for the *Souldierie*, and *Militar Forees* of the *Realme*

Inclo-

Incloſures at that time began to be more frequent, whereby Arrable Land (which could not be manured without People and Families) was turned into Paſture, which was eaſily rid by a few *Heardſ-men*; and Tenancies for *Yeares*, *Liues*, and *At Will* (whereupon much of the *Yeomanrie* liued) were turned into Demeſnes. This bred a decay of People, and (by conſequence) a decay of *Townes*, *Churches*, *Tithes*, and the like. The King likewiſe knew full well, and in no wiſe forgot, that there enſued withall vpon this a decay and diminution of *Snbſidies* and *Taxes*; for the more Gentlemen, euer the lower Bookes of *Snbſidies*. In remedying of this inconuenience, the Kings Wiſdome was admirable, and the *Parliaments* at that time. *Incloſures* they would not forbid, for that had beene to forbid the improuement of the *Patrimonie* of the Kingdome; nor *Tillage* they would not compell, for that was to ſtriue with Nature and Vtilitie. But they tooke a courſe to take away depopulating *Incloſures*, and depopulating *Paſturage*, and yet not by that name, or by any Imperious expreſſe *Prohibition*, but by conſequence. The *Ordenance* was, *That all Houſes of Husbandry, that were vſed with twentie Acres of Ground, and vpwards, ſhould bee maintained and kept vp for euer; together with a competent Proportion of Land to be vſed and occupied with them*; and in no wiſe to bee ſeuered from them, as by another *Statute*, made afterwards in his Succeſſors time, was more fully declared. This vpon Forfeiture to be taken, not by way of Popular *Action*, but by ſeizure of the Land it ſelfe, by the King and Lords of the *Fee*, as to halfe the Profits, till the Houſes and Lands were reſtored. By this meanes the Houſes being kept vp, did of neceſſitie inforce a *Dweller*; and the proportion of Land for Occupation being kept vp, did of neceſſitie inforce that *Dweller* not to be a Begger or *Cottager*, but a man

of ſome ſubſtance, that might keepe Hiends and Seruants, and ſet the Plough on going. This did wonderfully concerne the *Might* and *Manner-hood* of the Kingdome, to haue Fermes, as it were of a *Standerd*, ſufficient to maintaine an able Body out of Penurie, and did in effect amortize a great part of the Lands of the Kingdome vnto the Hold and Occupation of the *Yeomanrie* or *Middle-People*, of a Condition betweene *Gentlemen*, and *Cottagers*, or *Peſants*. Now, how much this did aduance the *Militar Power* of the Kingdome, is apparant by the true *Principles* of Warre, and the Examples of other Kingdomes. For it hath beene held by the generall Opinion of men of beſt Iudgement in the Warres (howſoeuer ſome few haue varied, and that it may receiue ſome diſtinction of Caſe) that the principall Strength of an Armie conſiſteth in the *Infanterie* or *Foot*. And to make good *Infanterie*, it requireth men bred, not in a ſeruile or indigent faſhion, but in ſome free and plentifull manner. Therefore if a *State* runne moſt to *Noblemen* and *Gentlemen*, and that the *Husband-men* and *Plough-men* bee but as their Work-folkes and Labourers, or elſe meere *Cottagers* (which are but *Houſed-Beggers*) you may haue a good *Cauallerie*, but neuer good ſtable Bands of *Foot*; like to *Coppice-Woods*, that if you leaue in them *Staddles* too thicke, they will runne to Buſhes and Briars, and haue little cleane Vnder-wood. And this is to bee ſeene in *France*, and *Italie*, and ſome other Parts abroad, where in effect all is *Nobleſſe*, or *Peſantrie*, I ſpeake of People out of Townes, and no Middle People; and therefore no good Forces of *Foot*: Inſomuch, as they are inforced to imploy Mercenarie Bands, of *Switzers*, and the like, for their *Battalions* of *Foot*. Whereby alſo it comes to paſſe, that thoſe *Nations* haue much People, and few *Souldiors*. Whereas the King ſaw, that contrariwiſe

it

it would follow, that *England*, though much leſſe in Territorie, yet ſhould haue infinitly more *Souldiours* of their natiue Forces, then thoſe other Nations haue. Thus did the King ſecretly ſowe *Hidraes* teeth, whereupon (according to the *Poets* fiction) ſhould riſe vp *Armed men* for the ſeruice of this Kingdome.

The King alſo (hauing care to make his Realme potent, aſwell by *Sea* as by *Land*) for the better maintenance of the *Nauie*, ordained; *That wines and woads from the parts of* Gaſcoigne *and* Languedocke, *ſhould not be brought but in Engliſh bottomes*; Bowing the ancient Policie of this Eſtate, from conſideration of *Plentie*, to conſideration of *Power*. For that almoſt all the ancient *Statutes* incite by all meanes *Merchant-Strangers*, to bring in all ſorts of Commodities; hauing for end *Cheapneſſe*, and not looking to the point of *State* concerning the *Nauall-power*.

The King alſo made a *Statute* in that *Parliament*, Monatory and Minatory, towards *Iuſtices* of *Peace*, that they ſhould duly execute their office, inuiting complaints againſt them, firſt to their *Fellow-Iuſtices*, then to the *Iuſtices* of *Aſſiſe*, then to the *King* or *Chancellor*; and that a *Proclamation*, which hee had publiſhed of that Tenor, ſhould be reade in open *Seſſions* foure times a yeare, to keepe them awake. Meaning alſo to haue his lawes executed, and thereby to reape either *Obedience* or *Forfeitures*; (wherein towards his latter times hee did decline too much to the left hand) he did ordaine remedie againſt the practice that was growne in vſe, to ſtop and dampe *Informations* vpon *Penall Lawes*, by procuring *Informations* by colluſion to be put in by the Confederates of the Delinquents, to be faintly proſecuted, and let fall at pleaſure, and pleading them in Barre of the *Informations*, which were proſecuted with effect.

He made alſo *Lawes* for the correction of the *Mint*,

and counterfaiting of forreine *Coyne* currant. And that no payment in *Gold*, ſhould bee made to any *Merchant-ſtranger*, the better to keepe Treaſure within the *Realme*, for that *Gold* was the mettall that lay in leaſt roome.

He made alſo *Statutes* for the maintenance of *Draperie*, and the keeping of *Wools* within the *Realme*; and not only ſo, but for ſtinting, and limiting the prices of *Cloth*, one for the *Finer*, and another for the *Courſer* ſort. Which I note, both becauſe it was a rare thing to ſet prices by *Statute*, eſpecially vpon our Home-Commodities; and becauſe of the wiſe *Modele* of this *Act*, not preſcribing Prices, but ſtinting them not to exceed a rate, that the *Clothier* might drape accordingly as he might affoord.

Diuers other good *Statutes* were made that *Parliament*, but theſe were the principall. And here I doe deſire thoſe, into whoſe hands this worke ſhall fall, that they do take in good part my long inſiſting vpon the *Lawes*, that were made in this Kings raigne. Whereof I haue theſe reaſons; Both becauſe it was the preheminent vertue and merite of this King, to whoſe memorie I doe honour; and becauſe it hath ſome correſpondence to my Perſon; but chiefly, becauſe (in my iudgement) it is ſome defect euen in the beſt writers of *Hiſtorie*, that they doe not often enough ſummarily deliuer and ſet downe the moſt memorable *Lawes*, that paſſed in the times whereof they writ, being indeed the principall *Acts* of Peace. For though they may bee had in *Originall Bookes* of *Law* themſelues; yet that informeth not the iudgement of *Kings* and *Councellors*, and *Perſons* of *Eſtate*, ſo well, as to ſee them deſcribed, and entred in the *Table* and *Pourtrait* of the Times.

About the ſame time, the King had a *Loane* from the *Citie* of *Foure thouſand pounds*; which was double

to

to that they lent before, and was duely and orderly payde backe at the day, as the former likewiſe had beene. The King euer chooſing rather to borrow too ſoone, then to pay too late, and ſo keeping vp his Credit.

Neither had the King yet caſt off his care, and hopes touching *Britaine*, but thought to maſter the occaſion by Policie, though his Armes had beene vnfortunate, and to bereaue the *French King* of the fruit of his *Victorie*. The ſumme of his deſigne was, to encourage MAXIMILIAN to goe on with his ſuit, for the marriage of ANNE, the heire of *Britaine*, and to aide him to the conſummation thereof. But the affaires of MAXIMILIAN were at that time in great trouble and combuſtion, by a *Rebellion* of his Subiects in *Flanders*; eſpecially thoſe of *Bruges* and *Gaunt*, whereof the Towne of *Bruges* (at ſuch time as MAXIMILIAN was there in perſon) had ſodainly armed in tumult, and ſlaine ſome of his principall Officers, and taken himſelfe priſoner, and held him in durance, till they had enforced him, and ſome of his Councellors, to take a ſolemne oath, to pardon all their offences, and neuer to queſtion and reuenge the ſame in time to come. Neuertheleſſe FREDERICKE the *Emperour* would not ſuffer this reproach and indignitie offered to his ſonne to paſſe, but made ſharpe warres vpon *Flanders*, to reclaime and chaſtiſe the *Rebels*. But the Lord RAVENSTEIN, a principall perſon about MAXIMILIAN, and one that had taken the oath of *Abolition* with his Maſter, pretending the Religion thereof, but indeed vpon priuate ambition, and (as it was thought) inſtigated and corrupted from *France*, forſooke the *Emperour* and MAXIMILIAN his Lord, and made himſelfe an Head of the *Popular Partie*, and ſeized vpon the Townes of *Ipre* and *Sluce*, with both the *Caſtels*. And forthwith ſent

ſent to the Lord CORDES, Gouernour of *Picardie* vnder the *French King*, to deſire aide, and to moue him, that hee on the behalfe of the *French King* would bee *Protector* of the *United Townes*, and by force of Armes reduce the reſt. The Lord CORDES was readie to embrace the occaſion, which was partly of his owne ſetting, and ſent forthwith greater *Forces*, then it had beene poſſible for him to raiſe on the ſodaine, if hee had not looked for ſuch a ſummons before, in aide of the Lord RAVENSTEIN, and the *Flemmings*, with inſtructions to inueſt the Townes betweene *France* and *Bruges*. The *French Forces* beſieged a little Towne called *Dixmue*, where part of the *Flemmiſh Forces* ioyned with them. While they lay at this ſiege, the *King* of *England*, vpon pretence of the ſafety of the *Engliſh Pale* about *Calice*, but in truth being loth that MAXIMILIAN ſhould become contemptible, and thereby bee ſhaken of by the States of *Britaine* about this marriage, ſent ouer the Lord MORLEY with a thouſand men vnto the Lord DAVBIGNY, then Deputie of *Calice*, with ſecret inſtructions to aide MAXIMILIAN, and to raiſe the ſiege of *Dixmue*. The Lord DAVBIGNY (giuing it out that all was for the ſtrengthning of the *Engliſh Marches*) drew out of the *Garriſons* of *Calice*, *Hammes*, and *Guines*, to the number of a thouſand Men more. So that with the freſh Succours that came vnder the *Conduct* of the Lord MORLEY, they made vp to the number of two thouſand, or better. Which *Forces* ioyning with ſome Companies of *Almaines*, put themſelues into *Dixmue*, not perceiued by the Enemies; and paſſing through the Towne with ſome reenforcement (from the *Forces* that were in the Towne) aſſailed the Enemies Campe, negligently guarded, as beeing out of feare; where there was a bloudy fight, in which the *Engliſh* and their *Partakers* ob-

obtained the victorie, and ſlew to the number of eight thouſand Men, with the loſſe on the *Engliſh* part of a hundred or there abouts; amongſt whom was the Lord MORLEY. They tooke alſo their great Ordinance, with much rich ſpoiles, which they carried to *Newport*; whence the Lord DAVBIGNY returned to *Calice*, leauing the hurt Men, and ſome other Voluntaries in *Newport*. But the Lord CORDES being at *Ipre* with a great power of Men, thinking to recouer the loſſe and diſgrace of the fight at *Dixmue*, came preſently on, and ſate downe before *Newport*, and beſieged it; and after ſome dayes ſiege, hee reſolued to trie the fortune of an *Aſſault*: Which hee did one day, and ſucceeded therein ſo farre, that hee had taken the principall Tower and Fort in that Citie, and planted vpon it the *French* Banner. Whence neuertheleſſe they were preſently beaten forth by the *Engliſh*, by the helpe of ſome freſh Succours of Archers, arriuing by good fortune (at the inſtant) in the Hauen of *Newport*. Whereupon the Lord CORDES diſcouraged, and meaſuring the new Succours (which were ſmall) by the ſucceſſe (which was great) leuied his Siege. By this meanes, matters grew more exaſperate betweene the two Kings of *England* and *France*, for that in the Warre of *Flanders*, the auxiliarie Forces of *French* and *Engliſh* were much blouded one againſt another. Which Bloud rankled the more, by the vaine wordes of the Lord CORDES, that declared himſelfe an open Enemie of the *Engliſh*, beyond that that appertayned to the preſent Seruice; making it a common byword of his, *That hee could bee content to lye in Hell ſeuen yeares, ſo hee might winne* Calice *from the* Engliſh.

The King hauing thus vpheld the Reputation of MAXIMILIAN, aduiſed him now to preſſe on his Mar-

Marriage with *Britaine* to a concluſion. Which MAXIMILIAN accordingly did, and ſo farre forth preuayled both with the young *Lady*, and with the principall perſons about her, as the Marriage was conſummate by *Proxie*, with a *Ceremonie* at that time in theſe Parts new. For ſhee was not onely publikely contracted, but ſtated as a *Bride*, and ſolemnely Bedded; and after ſhee was layde, there came in MAXIMILIANS *Ambaſſadour* with letters of *Procuration*, and in the preſeuce of ſundry Noble Perſonages, Men and Women, put his Legge (ſtript naked to the Knee) betweene the Eſpouſall Sheets; to the end, that that *Ceremonie* might bee thought to amount to a *Conſummation*, and actuall Knowledge. This done, MAXIMILIAN (whoſe propertie was to leaue things then, when they were almoſt come to perfection, and to end them by imagination; like ill Archers, that draw not their Arrowes vp to the Head; and who might as eaſily haue bedded the *Lady* himſelfe, as to haue made a *Play* and *Diſguiſe* of it) thinking now all aſſured, neglected for a time his further Proceeding, and intended his Warres. Meane while, the *French King* (conſulting with his *Diuines*, and finding that this pretended *Conſummation* was rather an *Inuention* of Court, then any wayes valide by the Lawes of the *Church*) went more really to worke, and by ſecret Inſtruments and cunning Agents, as well *Matrons* about the young *Lady*, as *Councellors*, firſt ſought to remoue the Point of *Religion* and *Honour* out of the minde of the *Lady* her ſelfe, wherein there was a double labour. For MAXIMILIAN was not onely contracted vnto the *Lady*, but MAXIMILIANS daughter was likewiſe contracted to King CHARLES. So as the *Marriage halted vpon both feet*, and was not cleare on ~~the other~~ either ſide. But for the *Contract* with King CHARLES, the Exception lay plaine and faire; for that MAXIMILIANS

LIANS daughter was vnder yeares of *Conſent*, and ſo not bound by Law, but a power of Diſagreement left to eyther part. But for the *Contract* made by MAXIMILIAN with the *Lady* her ſelfe, they were harder driuen: hauing nothing to alledge, but that it was done without the conſent of her *Soueraigne* Lord, King CHARLES, whoſe *Ward* and *Client* ſhee was, and Hee to her in place of a Father; and therefore it was void, and of no force, for want of ſuch Conſent. Which defect (they ſaid) though it would not euacuate a *Marriage*, after *Cohabitation*, and *Actuall Conſummation*; yet it was enough to make voide a *Contract*. For as for the pretended *Conſummation*, they made ſport with it, and ſaid: *That it was an argument, that* MAXIMILIAN *was a Widdower, and a cold Wooer, that could content himſelfe to be a Bridegroome by Deputie, and would not make a little Iourney, to put all out of queſtion.* So that the young *Lady*, wrought vpon by theſe Reaſons, finely inſtilled by ſuch as the *French King* (who ſpared for no Rewards or Promiſes) had made on his ſide; and allured likewiſe by the preſent Glory and Greatneſſe of King CHARLES, (being alſo a young King, and a *Batchelor*) and loth to make her Countrey the Seat of a long and miſerable Warre; ſecretly yeelded to accept of King CHARLES. But during this ſecret *Treatie* with the *Lady*, the better to ſaue it from Blaſts of Oppoſition and Interruption, King CHARLES reſorting to his wonted Arts, and thinking to carry the *Marriage*, as hee had carried the Warres, by entertaining the King of *England* in vaine beliefe, ſent a ſolemne *Ambaſſage* by FRANCIS Lord of *Luxemburgh*, CHARLES MARIGNIAN and ROBERT GAGVIEN, Generall of the *Order* of the *Bonnes Hommes* of the *Trinitie*, to treat a Peace and League with the King; accoupling it with an *Article* in the nature of a *Requeſt*, that the

French King might with the Kings good will (according vnto his right of *Seigniorie* and *Tutelage*) diſpoſe of the Marriage of the young *Ducheſſe* of *Britaine*, as hee ſhould thinke good; offering by a Iudiciall proceeding to make voide the *Marriage* of MAXIMILIAN by *Proxie*. Alſo all this while the better to amuſe the world, hee did continue in his Court and cuſtodie the Daughter of MAXIMILIAN, who formerly had beene ſent vnto him, to bee bred and educated in *France*; not diſmiſſing or renvoying her, but contrariwiſe profeſſing and giuing out ſtrongly, that hee meant to proceed with that Match. And that for the *Ducheſſe* of *Britaine*, hee deſired onely to preſerue his right of *Seigniory*, and to giue her in *Marriage* to ſome ſuch *Allye*, as might depend vpon him.

When the three Commiſſioners came to the Court of *England*, they deliuered their *Ambaſſage* vnto the King, who remitted them to his *Councell*; where ſome dayes after they had Audience, and made their Propoſition by the *Prior* of the *Trinitie* (who though hee were third in place, yet was held the beſt Speaker of them) to this effect.

MY Lords, the King our Maſter, the greateſt and mightieſt King that raigned in France *ſince* CHARLES *the Great (whoſe Name he beareth) hath neuertheleſſe thought it no diſparagement to his Greatneſſe, at this time to propound a Peace, yea, and to pray a Peace with the King of* England. *For which purpoſe hee hath ſent vs his Commiſſioners, inſtructed and enabled with full and ample power,*

to

to treate and conclude; giuing vs further in charge, to open in ſome other buſineſſe the ſecrets of his owne intentions. Theſe be indeed the precious Loue-tokens *betweene great Kings, to communicate one with another the true ſtate of their affaires, and to paſſe by nice Points of Honour, which ought not to giue Law vnto Affection. This I doe aſſure your Lordſhips; It is not poſsible for you to imagine the true and cordiall Loue, that the King our Maſter beareth to your Soueraigne, except you were neare him, as we are. He vſeth his Name with ſo great reſpect; hee remembreth their firſt acquaintance at* Paris *with ſo great contentment; nay, hee neuer ſpeaks of him, but that preſently he falls into diſcourſe of the miſeries of great Kings, in that they cannot conuerſe with their Equalls, but with Seruants. This affection to your Kings Perſon and Vertues,* GOD *hath put into the Heart of our Maſter, no doubt for the good of Chriſtendome, and for purpoſes yet vnknowne to vs all. For other Roote it cannot haue, ſince it was the ſame to the Earle of* Richmond, *that it is now to the King of* England. *This is therefore the firſt motiue that makes our King to deſire Peace, and League with your Soueraigne: Good affection, and ſomewhat that hee findes in his owne Heart. This affection is alſo armed*

with reaſon of Eſtate. For our King doth in all candour and frankneſſe of dealing open himſelfe vnto you; that hauing an honourable, yea, and a holy Purpoſe, to make a Voyage and Warre in remote Parts, be conſidereth that it will be of no ſmall effect, in point of Reputation to his enterpriſe, if it be knowne abroad, that hee is in good peace with all his Neighbour Princes, and ſpecially with the King of England, *whom for good cauſes he eſteemeth moſt.*

But now (my Lords) giue me leaue to vſe a few words to remoue all ſcruples and miſſe-vnderſtandings, betweene your Soueraigne and ours, concerning ſome late Actions; which if they be not cleared, may perhaps hinder this Peace. To the end, that for matters paſt, neither King may conceiue vnkindneſſe of other, nor thinke the other conceiueth vnkindneſſe of him. The late Actions are two; That of Brittaine, *and that of* Flanders. *In both which, it is true, that the Subiects ſwords of both Kings haue encountred and ſtricken, and the wayes and Inclinations alſo of the two Kings, in reſpect of their Confederates and Allies, haue ſeuered.*

For that of Brittaine; *The King your Soueraigne knoweth beſt what hath paſſed. It was a Warre of neceſsitie on our Maſters part. And though the Motiues of it were ſharpe and pi-*

quant

quant as could be, yet did he make that Warre rather with an Oliue-branch, *then a* Laurel-branch *in his Hand, more deſiring Peace then Victorie. Beſides, from time to time he ſent (as it were)* Blank-papers *to your King, to write the conditions of Peace. For though both his Honour and Safetie went vpon it, yet he thought neither of them too precious, to put into the King of* Englands *hands. Neither doth your King on the other ſide make any vnfriendly interpretation, of your Kings ſending of ſuccours to the Duke of* Brittaine; *for the King knoweth well, that many things muſt bee done of Kings for ſatisfaction of their People, and it is not hard to diſcerne what is a Kings owne. But this matter of* Brittaine *is now (by the Act of* GOD*) ended and paſſed; and (as the King hopeth) like the way of a Ship in the Sea, without leauing any impreſſion in either of the Kings mindes; as hee is ſure for his part it hath not done in his.*

For the Action of Flanders; *As the former of* Brittaine *was a Warre of neceſſitie, ſo this was a Warre of Iuſtice; which with a good* King *is of equall neceſſitie, with danger of Eſtate, for elſe hee ſhould leaue to bee a King. The Subiects of* Burgundie *are Subiects in Chiefe to the Crowne of* France, *and their Duke the Homager and Vaſſall of* France. *They had wont to bee good Sub-*

Subiects, howſoeuer MAXIMILIAN hath of late diſtempered them. They fled to the King for Iuſtice, and deliuerance from oppreſsion. Iuſtice hee could not denie; Purchaſe hee did not ſeeke. This was good for MAXIMILIAN, if he could haue ſeene it in people mutined, to arreſt Fury, and preuent Deſpaire. My Lords, it may bee this I haue ſaid is needleſſe, ſaue that the King our Maſter is tender in any thing, that may but glance vpon the friendſhip of England. The amitie betweene the two Kings (no doubt) ſtands entire and inuiolate. And that their Subiects ſwords haue claſhed, it is nothing vnto the publike Peace of the Crownes; it being a thing very vſuall in auxiliarie Forces of the beſt and ſtraiteſt Confederates, to meete and draw bloud in the Field. Nay, many times there bee Aides of the ſame Nation on both ſides, and yet it is not (for all that) A Kingdome diuided in it ſelfe.

It reſteth (my Lords) that I impart vnto you a matter, that I know your Lordſhips all will much reioyce to heare; as that which importeth the Chriſtian Common-weale more, then any Action that hath hapened of long time. The King our Maſter hath a purpoſe and determination, to make Warre vpon the kingdome of Naples, beeing now in the poſſeſsion of a Baſtardſlip of Ar-

Arragon, *but appertayning vnto his Maieſtie, by cleare and vndoubted right; which if hee ſhould not by iuſt Armes ſeeke to recouer, hee could neither acquite his Honour, nor anſwere it to his People. But his Noble and Chriſtian thoughts reſt not here. For his Reſolution and Hope is, to make the Re-conqueſt of* Naples, *but as a Bridge, to tranſport his Forces into* Grecia; *and not to ſpare Bloud or Treaſure (If it were to the impawning of his Crowne, and diſ-peopling of* France) *till either hee hath ouerthrowne the Empire of the* OTTOMANS, *or taken it in his way to Paradiſe. The* King *knoweth well, that this is a deſigne; that could not ariſe in the minde of any* King, *that did not ſtedfaſtly looke vp vnto* GOD, *whoſe quarrell this is, and from whom commeth both the Will, and the Deed. But yet it is agreeable to the Perſon that hee beareth (though vnworthy) of the* Thrice-Chriſtian King, *and the eldeſt Sonne of the* Church. *Whereunto he is alſo inuited by the Example (in more ancient time) of* King HENRIE *the Fourth of* England, *(the firſt Renowned* King *of the Houſe of* LANCASTER: *Anceſtour, though not Progenitour to your* King) *who had a purpoſe towards the end of his time (as you know better) to make an* Expedition *into the* Holy-Land; *and*

and by the Example alſo (preſent before his eyes) of that Honourable and Religious Warre which the King of Spaine now maketh, and hath almoſt brought to perfection, for the recouerie of the Realme of Granada from the Moores. And although this Enterpriſe may ſeeme vaſt and vnmeaſured, for the King to attempt that by his owne Forces, wherein heretofore a Coniunction of moſt of the Chriſtian Princes hath found worke enough; yet his Maieſtie wiſely conſidereth, that ſometimes ſmaller Forces being vnited vnder one Command, are more effectuall in Prooſe (though not ſo promiſing in Opinion and Fame) then much greater Forces, variouſly compounded by Aſſociations and Leagues; which commonly in a ſhort time after their Beginnings, turne to Diſſociations and Diuiſions. But my (Lords) that which is as a Voice from Heauen that called the King to this Enterpriſe, is a Rent at this time in the Houſe of the OTTOMANS. I doe not ſay, but there hath beene Brother againſt Brother in that Houſe before, but neuer any that had Refuge to the Armes of the Chriſtians, as now hath GEMES, (Brother vnto BAIAZETH, that raigneth) the farre brauer Man of the two; the other being betweene a Monke and a Philoſopher,

and

and better read in the Alcoran *and* Auerroes, *then able to wield the* Scepter *of ſo warlike an* Empire. *This therefore is the King our* Maſters *memorable and Heroicall Reſolution for an* Holy Warre. *And becauſe hee carrieth in this the Perſon of a* Chriſtian Souldiour, *as well as of a Great* Temporall Monarch; *hee beginneth with* Humilitie, *and is content for this cauſe, to begge* Peace *at the hands of other* Chriſtian Kings. *There remayneth onely, rather a* Ciuill Requeſt, *then any eſſentiall part of our* Negotiation, *which the King maketh to the King your* Soueraigne. *The King (as all the World knoweth) is* Lord *in* Chiefe *of the* Duchie *of* Britaine. *The* Marriage *of the* Heire *belongeth to him as* Guardian. *This is a priuate* Patrimoniall Right, *and no Buſineſſe of* Eſtate: *yet neuertheleſſe (to runne a faire courſe with your King, whom he deſires to make another Himſelfe, and to bee one and the ſame thing with him) his* Requeſt *is, That with the Kings Fauour and Conſent, hee may diſpoſe of her* Marriage, *as hee thinketh good, and make void the intruded and pretended* Marriage *of* MAXIMILIAN, *according to Iuſtice. This (my Lords) is all that I haue to ſay, deſiring your pardon for my weakeneſſe in the deliuerie.*

THus did the *French Ambaſſadors* with great ſhewe of their Kings affection, and many ſugred words, ſeeke to addulce all matters betweene the two Kings, hauing two things for their ends; The one, to keepe the King quiet till the Marriage of *Britaine* was paſt, and this was but a *Summer fruit*, which they thought was almoſt ripe, and would be ſoone gathered. The other was more laſting; and that was to put him into ſuch a temper, as he might be no diſturbance or impediment to the voyage for *Italie*. The *Lords* of the *Councell* were ſilent; and ſaid only, *That they knew the Ambaſſadors would looke for no anſwere, till they had reported to the King*; And ſo they roſe from *Councell*. The King could not well tell what to thinke of the Marriage of *Britaine*. Hee ſaw plainly the ambition of the *French King* was, to impatronize himſelfe of the *Duchie*; but he wondred he would bring into his *Houſe* a litigious Marriage, eſpecially conſidering who was his Succeſſor. But weighing one thing with another he gaue *Britaine* for loſt; but reſolued to make his profit of this buſineſſe of *Britaine*, as a quarrell for Warre; and that of *Naples*, as a *Wrench* and meane for Peace; being well aduertiſed, how ſtrongly the King was bent vpon that *Action*. Hauing therefore conferred diuers times with his *Councell*, and keeping himſelfe ſomewhat cloſe; hee gaue a direction to the *Chancellor*, for a formall anſwere to the *Ambaſſadors*, and that hee did in the preſence of his *Councell*. And after calling the *Chancellor* to him apart, bad him ſpeake in ſuch language, as was fit for a *Treatie* that was to end in a Breach, and gaue him alſo a ſpeciall *Caueat*, that he ſhould not vſe any words, to diſcourage the voyage of *Italie*. Soone after the *Ambaſſadors* were ſent for to the *Councell*, and the Lord *Chancellor* ſpake to them in this ſort

My

MY *Lords Ambaſſadours, I ſhall make anſwere by the Kings Commandement, vnto the eloquent Declaration of you my Lord* Prior, *in a briefe and plaine manner. The King forgetteth not his former loue and acquaintance with the King your* Maſter. *But of this there needeth no Repetition. For if it bee betweene them as it was, it is well; if there bee any alteration, it is not words that will make it vp.*

For the Buſineſſe of Britaine, *the King findeth it a little ſtrange, that the* French King *maketh mention of it, as matter of well deſeruing at his hand. For that Deſeruing was no more, but to make him his* Inſtrument, *to ſurprize one of his beſt* Confederates. *And for the* Marriage, *the King would not meddle in it if your* Maſter *would marry by the* Booke, *and not by the* Sword.

For that of Flanders, *if the Subiects of* Burgundie *had appealed to your King, as their Chiefe Lord, at firſt, by way of* Supplication; *it might haue had a ſhew of Iuſtice. But it was a new forme of* Proceſſe, *for Subiects to impriſon their* Prince *firſt, and to ſlay his* Officers, *and then to be* Complainants. *The King ſaith, That ſure he is, when the* French King *and himſelfe ſent to the Subiects of* Scotland (*that*

had taken Armes againſt their King) they both ſpake in another Stile, and did in Princely manner ſignifie their deteſtation of Popular Attentates, vpon the Perſon or Authoritie of Princes. But my Lords Ambaſſadors, the King leaueth theſe two Actions thus: That on the one ſide, hee hath not receiued any manner of ſatisfaction from you concerning them; and on the other that he doth not apprehend them ſo deepely, as in reſpect of them, to refuſe to treat of Peace, if other things may goe hand in hand. As for the Warre of Naples, and the Deſigne againſt the Turke; the King hath commanded mee expreſſely to ſay, That hee doth wiſh with all his heart, to his good Brother the French King, that his Fortunes may ſucceede according to his Hopes, and Honourable intentions. And whenſoeuer he ſhall heare, that he is prepared for Grecia, as your Maſter is pleaſed now to ſay, that he beggeth a Peace of the King, ſo the King will then begge of him a part in that Warre.

But now my Lords Ambaſſadours, I am to propound vnto you ſomewhat on the Kings part. The King your Maſter hath taught our King what to ſay and demand. You ſay (my Lord Prior) that your King is reſolued to recouer his right to Naples, wrongfully detained from him.

And

And that if hee ſhould not thus doe, he could not acquite his Honour, nor anſwere it to his People. Thinke (my Lords) that the King our Maſter *ſaith the ſame thing ouer againe to you, touching* Normandie, Guien, Angeou, *yea and the Kingdome of* France *it ſelfe. I cannot expreſſe it better then in your owne words, If therefore the* French *King ſhall conſent, that the King our* Maſters *Title to* France, *(at leaſt* Tribute *for the ſame) be handled in the* Treatie, *the King is content to goe on with the reſt; otherwiſe he refuſeth to Treat.*

THe *Ambaſſadors* being ſomwhat abaſhed with this demand, anſwered in ſome heate; *That they doubted not, but the King their Soueraignes ſword would be able to maintaine his Scepter:* And they aſſured themſelues, he neither could nor would yeeld to any diminution of the Crowne of *France*, either in *Territory* or *Regalitie.* But howſoeuer, they were too great matters for them to ſpeake of, hauing no Commiſſion. It was replied, that the King looked for no other anſwer from them; but would forth-with ſend his owne *Ambaſſadors* to the *French King.* There was a queſtion alſo asked at the Table; *Whether the French King would agree to haue the diſpoſing of the Marriage of* Britaine *with an exception and excluſion, that he ſhould not marry her himſelfe?* To which the *Ambaſſadors* anſwered; That it was ſo farre out of their Kings thoughts, as they had receiued no Inſtructions touching the ſame. Thus were the *Ambaſſadors* diſmiſſed, all ſaue the *Prior*; and were followed immediatly by THOMAS *Earle of Ormond*, and THOMAS GOLDENSTON *Prior of Chriſt-*

Chriſt-Church in *Canterbury*; who were preſently ſent ouer into *France*. In the meane ſpace, LIONELL Biſhop of *Concordia*, was ſent as *Nuntio* from *Pope* ALEXANDER the ſixth to both Kings, to mooue a Peace betweene them. For *Pope* ALEXANDER finding himſelfe pent and lockt vp, by a League and Aſſociation of the Principall States of *Italie*, that hee could not make his way for the aduancement of his owne *Houſe*, (which he immoderately thirſted after) was deſirous to trouble the waters in *Italie*, that hee might fiſh the better; caſting the Net, not out of Saint PETERS, but out of BORGIA's Barke. And doubting leaſt the feares from *England*, might ſtay the *French Kings* voyage into *Italie*, diſpatched this *Biſhop*, to compoſe all matters betweene the two Kings, if he could. Who firſt repaired to the *French King*, and finding him well inclined (as he conceiued) tooke on his Iourney towards *England*, and found the *Engliſh Ambaſſadors* at *Calice*, on their way towards the *French King*. After ſome conference with them, hee was in Honourable manner tranſported ouer into *England*, where he had audience of the King. But notwithſtanding hee had a good *Ominous name* to haue made a Peace, nothing followed. For in the meane time, the purpoſe of the *French King* to marry the Ducheſſe could be no longer diſſembled. Wherefore the *Engliſh Ambaſſadors* (finding how things went) tooke their leaue, and returned. And the *Prior* alſo was warned from hence, to depart out of *England*. Who when he turned his backe (more like a *Pedant*, then an *Ambaſſadour*) diſperſed a better *Libell*, in Latine Verſe, againſt the King; vnto which the King (though hee had nothing of a *Pedant*) yet was content to cauſe an anſwer to bee made in like Verſe; and that as ſpeaking in his owne Perſon, but in a ſtyle of *Scorne* and *Sport*. About this time alſo was borne the Kings ſecond Son

HENRY,

HENRY, who afterward raigned. And ſoone after followed the ſolemnization of the marriage between CHARLES, and ANNE *Ducheſſe* of *Britaine*, with whom he receiued the *Duchy* of *Britaine* as her Dowry; the Daughter of MAXIMILIAN being a little before ſent home. Which when it came to the Eares of MAXIMILIAN (who would neuer belieue it, till it was done, being euer the Principall in deceiuing himſelfe, though in this the *French King* did very handſomely ſecond it) and tumbling it ouer and ouer in his thoughts, that he ſhould at one blowe (with ſuch a double ſcorne) be defeated, both of the marriage of his daughter, and his owne, (vpon both which hee had fixed high imaginations;) he loſt all patience, and caſting of the Reſpects fit to be continued betweene great Kings (euen when their bloud is hotteſt, and moſt riſen) fell to bitter *Inuectiues* againſt the Perſon and Actions of the *French King*. And (by how much he was the leſſe able to do, talking ſo much the more) ſpake all the Iniuries he could deuiſe of CHARLES, ſaying; That he was the moſt perfidious man vpon the Earth, and that he had made a marriage compounded between an *Adʋoutry* and a *Rape*: which was done (he ſaid) by the iuſt iudgement of God; to the end, that (the *Nullitie* thereof being ſo apparant to all the World) the Race of ſo vnworthy a perſon might not raigne in *France*. And forthwith he ſent *Ambaſſadors* as well to the King of *England*, as to the King of *Spaine*, to incite them to Warre, and to treat a *League* offenſiue againſt *France*, promiſing to concurre with great Forces of his owne. Hereupon the King of *England* (going neuertheleſſe his owne way) called a *Parliament*, it being the ſeuenth yeere of his Raigne; and the firſt day of opening thereof (ſitting vnder his *Cloth* of *Eſtate*) ſpake himſele vnto his Lords, and Commons in this manner.

My

MY Lords, and you the Commons; When I purpoſed to make a Warre in Britaine by my Lieutenant, I made declaration thereof to you by my Chancellor. But now that I meane to make a Warre vpon France in Perſon, I will declare it to you my Selfe. That Warre was to defend another mans Right, but this is to recouer our owne; And that ended by Accident, but we hope this ſhall end in Victory.

The French King troubles the Chriſtian World. That which he hath, is not his owne, and yet he ſeeketh more. He hath inueſted himſelfe of Britaine. Hee maintaineth the Rebels in Flanders; and he threatneth Italy. For Our Selues, he hath proceeded from Diſſimulation, to Neglect; and from Neglect, to Contumely. He hath aſſayled our Confederates: He denieth our Tribute: In a word, he ſeekes Warre. So did not his Father, but ſought Peace at Our Hands; and ſo perhaps will hee, when good Counſell or Time, ſhall make him ſee as much as his Father did.

Meane while, let Vs make his Ambition, our Aduantage; and let vs not ſtand vpon a few Crownes of Tribute, or Acknowledgement, but (by the fauour of Almightie GOD) try Our Right for the Crowne of France it ſelfe; remembring that there hath beene A

French

French King Priſoner in *England*, and a King of *England* Crowned in *France*. *Our* Confederates *are not diminiſhed.* Burgundie *is in a mightier Hand then euer, and neuer more prouoked.* Britaine *cannot helpe vs, but it may hurt them.* *New* Acqueſts *are more* Burthen, *then* Strength. *The* Male-contents *of his owne* Kingdome, *haue not beene Baſe, Popular, nor Titularie* Impoſtors, *but of an higher Nature. The King of* Spaine (*doubt yee not*) *will ioyne with vs, not knowing there the* French Kings *Ambition will ſtay. Our Holy* Father *the* Pope, *likes no* Tramontanes *in* Italie. *But howſoeuer it bee, this Matter of* Confederates, *is rather to bee thought on, then reckoned on. For* GOD *forbid, but* England *ſhould bee able to get Reaſon of* France, *without a* Second.

At the Battailes *of* Creſsy, Poictiers, Agent-Court, *wee were of our ſelues.* France *hath much People, and few Souldiours. They haue no ſtable Bands of Foote. Some good Horſe they haue; but thoſe are* Forces, *which are leaſt fit for a Defenſiue* Warre, *where the Actions are in the* Aſſailants *choice. It was our* Diſcords *onely, that*

loſt France; *and* (*by the Power of* God) *it is the good* Peace *which wee now enioy, that will recouer it.* God *hath hitherto bleſſed my* Sword. *I haue in this time that I haue Raigned, weeded out my bad Subiects, and tryed my good. My People and I know one another; which breedes Confidence. And if there ſhould bee any bad Bloud left in the* Kingdome, *an Honourable* Forraine Warre *will vent it, or purifie it. In this great* Buſineſſe, *let mee haue your Aduice, and Aide. If any of you were to make his Sonne* Knight, *you might haue aide of your* Tenants *by* Law. *This concernes the* Knighthood *and* Spurres *of the* Kingdome, *whereof I am* Father; *and bound not onely to ſeeke to maintaine it, but to aduance it. But for* Matter *of* Treaſure, *let it not bee taken from the Pooreſt Sort; but from thoſe, to whom the Benefit of the Warre may redound.* France *is no Wilderneſſe: and I, that profeſſe Good Husbandrie, hope to make the Warre* (*after the Beginnings*) *to pay it ſelfe. Goe together in* God's *Name, and looſe no time; for I haue called this* Parliament *wholly for this Cauſe.*

Thus

THus ſpake the King; But for all this, though hee ſhewed great forwardneſſe for a Warre, not onely to his *Parliament* and *Court*, but to his *Priuie-Councell* likewiſe, (except the two *Biſhops* and a few more) yet neuertheleſſe in his ſecret intentions, hee had no purpoſe to goe through with any Warre vpon *France*. But the truth was, that hee did but traffique with that Warre, to make his *Returne* in money. Hee knew well, that *France* was now entire, and at vnitie with it ſelfe, and neuer ſo mightie many yeares before. Hee ſaw by the taſt, that hee had of his Forces ſent into *Britaine*, that the *French* knew well enough how to make warre with the *Engliſh*; by not putting things to the hazard of a *Battaile*, but wearing them by long Sieges of *Townes*, and ſtrong fortified Encampings. IAMES the Third of *Scotland*, (his true friend, and *Confederate*) gone; and IAMES the Fourth (that had ſucceeded) wholly at the deuotion of *France*, and ill affected towards him. As for the Coniunctions of FERDINANDO of *Spaine*, and MAXIMILIAN; hee could make no foundation vpon them. For the One had *Power*, and not *Will*; and the Other hath *Will*, and not *Power*. Beſides that, FERDINANDO had but newly taken breath, from the Warre with the *Moores*; and merchanded at this time with *France*, for the reſtoring of the Counties of *Ruſſignon* and *Perpignian*, oppignorated to the *French*. Neither was hee out of feare of the *Diſcontents*, and ill bloud within the *Realme*; which hauing vſed alwaies to repreſſe and appeaſe in perſon, hee was loth they ſhould find him at a diſtance beyond Sea, and engaged in warre. Finding therefore the Inconueniences and Difficulties in the proſecution of a Warre, hee caſt with himſelfe how to compaſſe two things. The one, how by the declaration, and inchoation of a Warre, to make his *Profit*. The other, how to come off from the Warre,

with ſauing of his *Honour*. For *Profit*, it was to bee made two wayes; vpon his *Subiects* for the *Warre*, and vpon his *Enemies* for the *Peace*; like a good *Merchant*, that maketh his gaine, both vpon the Commodities *Exported*, and *Imported* backe againe. For the point of *Honour*, wherein hee might ſuffer, for giuing ouer the Warre; hee conſidered well, that as hee could not truſt vpon the aides of FERDINANDO and MAXIMILIAN for ſupports of Warre: ſo the impuiſſance of the one, and the double proceeding of the other, lay faire for him for occaſions to accept of *Peace*. Theſe things hee did wiſely fore-ſee, and did as artificially conduct, whereby all things fell into his lappe, as hee deſired.

For as for the *Parliamant*, it preſently tooke fire, beeing affectionate (of old) the Warre of *France*; and deſirous afreſh to repaire the diſhonour, they thought the King ſuſtained by the loſſe of *Britaine*. Therefore they aduiſed the King (with great alacritie) to vndertake the Warre of *France*. And although the *Parliament* conſiſted of the *Firſt* and *Second Nobilitie* (together with principall *Citizens* and Townesmen) yet worthily and iuſtly reſpecting more the People (whoſe deputies they were) then their owne priuate Perſons, and finding by the Lord *Chancellours* ſpeech the Kings inclination that way; they conſented that *Commiſſioners* ſhould goe forth, for the gathering and leuying of a *Beneuolence*, from the more able ſort. This *Taxe* (called *Beneuolence*) was deuiſed by EDWARD the Fourth, for which hee ſuſtained much Enuie. It was aboliſhed by RICHARD the Third by *Act* of *Parliament*, to ingratiate himſelfe with the people; and it was now reuiued by the King, but with conſent of *Parliament*, for ſo it was not in the time of King EDWARD the Fourth. But by this way hee raiſed exceeding great ſummes. Inſomuch

as

as the Citie of *London* (in thoſe dayes) contributed nine thouſand pounds and better; and that chiefly leuied vpon the wealthier ſort. There is a Tradition of a *Dilemma*, that Biſhop MORTON the *Chancellour* vſed, to raiſe vp the *Beneuolence* to higher Rates; and ſome called it his *Forke*, and ſome his *Crotch*. For hee had couched an *Article* in the Inſtructions to the *Commiſſioners*, who were to leuie the *Beneuolence*; *That if they met with any that were ſparing, they ſhould tell them, That they muſt needs haue, becauſe they laid vp; and if they were ſpenders, they muſt needs haue, becauſe it was ſeene in their Port, and manner of liuing.* So neither kinde came amiſſe.

This *Parliament* was meerly a *Parliament* of Warre; for it was in Subſtance, but a declaration of Warre againſt *France*, and *Scotland*, with ſome *Statutes* conducing thereunto; As the ſeuere puniſhing of *Mortpayes*, and keeping backe of *Souldiours* wages in Captaines. The like ſeueritie for the departure of *Souldiours* without licence; Strengthening of the *Common-Law* in fauour of *Protections*, for thoſe that were in the Kings ſeruice; And the ſetting the gate open and wide, for men to ſell or *Morgage* their lands without *Fines* for *Alienation*, to furniſh themſelues with money for the Warre; And laſtly, the voiding of all *Scottiſhmen* out of *England*. There was alſo a *Statute*, for the diſperſing of the *Standard* of the *Exchequor*, throughout *England*; thereby to ſize *Weights* and *Meaſures*; and two or three more of leſſe importance.

After the *Parliament* was broken vp (which laſted not long) the King went on with his Preparations for the Warre of *France*; yet neglected not in the meane time the affaires of MAXIMILIAN, for the quieting of *Flanders*, and reſtoring him to his authoritie amongſt his *Subiects*. For at that time, the Lord of *Rauenſtein* beeing not onely a *Subiect* rebelled, but a *Seruant*

Seruant reuolted (and ſo much the more malicious and violent, by the aide of *Bruges* and *Gaunt*) had taken the Towne, and both the Caſtels of *Sluice*; as wee ſaid before.

And hauing (by the commoditie of the Hauen) gotten together certaine Ships and Barkes, fell to a kind of *Pyraticall* Trade; robbing and ſpoyling, and taking Priſoners the Ships and Veſſels of all Nations, that paſſed alongſt that Coaſt, towards the *Mart* of *Antwerpe*, or into any part of *Brabant*, *Zeland*, or *Freezland*; beeing euer well victualled from *Picardie*, beſides the commoditie of Victuals from *Sluice*, and the Countrey adjacent, and the auailes of his owne *Prizes*. The *French* aſſiſted him ſtill vnder-hand; and hee likewiſe (as all men doe, that haue beene of both ſides) thought himſelfe not ſafe, except hee depended vpon a third *Perſon*.

There was a ſmall Towne ſome two miles from *Bruges*, towards the Sea, called *Dam*; which was a Fort and Approch to *Bruges*, and had a relation alſo to *Sluice*. This Towne the King of the *Romans* had attempted often, (not for any worth of the Towne in it ſelfe, but becauſe it might choake *Bruges*, and cut it of from the Sea) and euer failed. But therewith the *Duke* of *Saxonie* came downe into *Flanders*, taking vpon him the Perſon of an *Vmpire*, to compoſe things betweene MAXIMILIAN and his Subiects; but being (indeed) faſt and aſſured to MAXIMILIAN. Vpon this Pretext of *Neutralitie* and Treatie, hee repaired to *Bruges*; deſiring of the *States* of *Bruges*, to enter peaceably into their Towne, with a Retinue of ſome number of men of Armes, fit for his Eſtate; beeing ſomewhat the more (as hee ſaid) the better to guard him in a Countrey, that was vp in Armes: and bearing them in hand, that hee was to communicate with them of diuers matters of great importance, for their

their good. Which hauing obtained of them, hee ſent his Carriages and *Harbingers* before him, to prouide his Lodging. So that his *Men* of *Warre* entred the Citie in good Array, but in peaceable manner, and he followed. They that went before, enquired ſtill for *Innes* and Lodgings, as if they would haue reſted there all Night, and ſo went on, till they came to the Gate, that leadeth directly towards *Dam*; and they of *Bruges* only gazed vpon them, and gaue them paſſage. The *Captaines* and Inhabitants of *Dam* alſo ſuſpected no harme, from any that paſſed through *Bruges*; and diſcouering Forces a farre of, ſuppoſed they had been ſome *Succours*, that were come from their Friends, knowing ſome Dangers towards them. And ſo perceiuing nothing but well, till it was too late, ſuffered them to enter their Towne. By which kind of *Sleight*, rather then *Stratageme*, the Towne of *Dam* was taken, and the Towne of *Bruges* ſhrewdly blockt vp, wherby they tooke great diſcouragement.

The *Duke* of *Saxonie* hauing wonne the Towne of *Dam*, ſent immediately to the King, to let him know that it was *Sluice* chiefely, and the Lord RAVENSTEIN, that kept the Rebellion of *Flanders* in life: And that if it pleaſed the King to beſiege it by Sea, hee alſo would beſiege it by Land, and ſo cut out the *Core* of thoſe Warres.

The King willing to vphold the Authoritie of MAXIMILIAN (the better to hold *France* in awe) and being likewiſe ſued vnto by his *Merchants*, for that the Seas were much infeſted by the Barkes of the Lord RAVENSTEIN; ſent ſtraight wayes Sir EDWARD POYNINGS, a valiant man, and of good ſeruice, with twelue *Ships*, well furniſhed with Souldiours and Artillerie, to cleare the Seas, and to beſiege *Sluice* on that part. The *Engliſhmen* did not only coupe vp the Lord RAVENSTEIN, that hee ſtirred

ſtirred not, and likewiſe hold in ſtrait Siege the Maritime part of the Towne; but alſo aſſailed one of the Caſtels, and renewed the aſſault ſo for twentie dayes ſpace (iſſuing ſtill out of their Ships at the Ebbe) as they made great ſlaughter of them of the Caſtell; who continually fought with them to repulſe them, though of the *Engliſh* part alſo were ſlaine a brother of the *Earle* of *Oxfords*, and ſome fiftie more.

But the *Siege* ſtill continuing more and more ſtrait, and both the Caſtels (which were the principall ſtrength of the Towne) being diſtreſſed, the one by the *Duke* of *Saxonie*, and the other by the *Engliſh*; and a Bridge of Boates, which the Lord RAVENSTEIN had made betweene both Caſtels, whereby Succours and Reliefe might paſſe from the one to the other, being on a night ſet on fire by the *Engliſh*, hee deſpayring to hold the Towne, yeilded (at the laſt) the Caſtels to the *Engliſh*, and the Towne to the *Duke* of *Saxonie*, by compoſition. Which done, the *Duke* of *Saxonie* and Sir EDWARD POYNINGS treated with them of *Bruges*, to ſubmit themſelues to MAXIMILIAN their Lord; which after ſome time they did, paying (in ſome good part) the charge of the Warre, whereby the *Almaines* and forraigne Succours were diſmiſſed. The example of *Bruges*, other of the *Reuolted Townes* followed; ſo that MAXIMILIAN grew to be out of danger, but (as his manner was to handle matters) neuer out of neceſſitie. And Sir EDWARD POYNINGS (after hee had continued at *Sluice* ſome good while, till all things were ſetled) returned vnto the King, beeing then before *Bulloigne*.

Somewhat about this time came Letters from FERDINANDO, and ISABELLA, King and Queene of *Spaine*; ſignifying the finall conqueſt of *Gra-*

Granada from the *Moores*; which Action in it ſelfe ſo worthie, King FERDINANDO (whoſe manner was, neuer to loſe any vertue for the ſhewing) had expreſſed and diſplayed in his Letters at large, with all the Particularities, and religious *Punctoes* and Ceremonies, that were obſerued in the reception of that *Citie* and *Kingdome*: Shewing amongſt other things, That the King would not by any meanes in perſon enter the Citie, vntill he had firſt aloofe ſeene the *Croſſe* ſet vp vpon the greater *Tower* of *Granada*, whereby it became *Chriſtian* ground: That likewiſe before hee would enter, he did *Homage* to God aboue, pronouncing by an *Herauld* from the *Height* of that Tower, that hee did acknowledge to haue recouered that *Kingdome*, by the helpe of GOD *Almightie* and the glorious *Virgin*, and the vertuous Apoſtle Saint IAMES, and the holy Father INNOCENT the Eight, together with the aides and ſeruices of his *Prelates*, *Nobles*, and *Commons*: That yet he ſtirred not from his *Campe*, till hee had ſeene a little Armie of *Martyres*, to the number of ſeuen hundred and more *Chriſtians* (that had liued in bonds and ſeruitude, as *Slaues* to the *Moores*) paſſe before his Eyes, ſinging a *Pſalme* for their Redemption; and that he had giuen *Tribute* vnto GOD by Almes, and reliefe, extended to them all, for his admiſsion into the Citie. Theſe things were in the Letters, with many more Ceremonies of a kind of *Holy Oſtentation.*

The King euer willing to put himſelfe into the *Conſort* or *Quire* of all religious Actions, and naturally affecting much the King of *Spaine*, (as farre as one King can affect another) partly for his vertues, and partly for a Counterpoiſe to *France*; vpon the receipt of theſe Letters, ſent all his *Nobles* and *Prelates*, that were about the *Court*, together with the *Maior* and *Aldermen* of *London*, in great ſolemnitie to the Church

of *Paules*; there to heare a Declaration from the Lord *Chancellor*, now *Cardinall*. When they were aſſembled, the *Cardinall* (ſtanding vpon the vppermoſt ſtep, or Halfe-paſe before the *Quire*; and all the *Nobles*, *Prelates*, and *Gouernours* of the Citie at the foot of the Staires) made a Speech to them; letting them know, that they were aſſembled in that Conſecrate place, to ſing vnto God a *New-ſong*: For that (ſaid he) theſe many yeares the *Chriſtians* haue not gayned new ground or Territorie vpon the *Infidels*, nor enlarged and ſet further the *Bounds* of the *Chriſtian-world*: But this is now done, by the proweſſe and deuotion of FERDINANDO and ISABELLA, Kings of *Spaine*; Who haue (to their immortall Honour) recouered the great and rich Kingdome of *Granada*, and the populous and mightie Citie of the ſame name, from the *Moores*, hauing beene in poſſeſsion thereof, by the ſpace of ſeuen hundred yeares, and more. For which, this Aſſembly and all *Chriſtians* are to render laud and thankes vnto God, and to celebrate this noble Act of the King of *Spaine*; who in this is not only *Victorious*, but *Apoſtolicall*, in the gayning of new Prouinces to the *Chriſtian* Faith. And the rather, for that this Victorie and Conqueſt is obtained, without much effuſion of bloud. Whereby it is to bee hoped, that there ſhall bee gayned, not only new Territorie, but infinite ſoules, to the Church of *Chriſt*; whom the *Almightie* (as it ſeemes) would haue liue to bee conuerted. Herewithall hee did relate ſome of the moſt memorable Particulars of the Warre and Victorie. And after his Speech ended, the whole aſſemblie went ſolemnely in *Proceſsion*, and *Te Deum* was ſung.

Immediately after the Solemnitie, the King kept his *May Day* at his Palace of *Sheine*, now *Richmond*. Where to warme the blood of his *Nobilitie*, and *Gallants*,

lants, againſt the warre, hee kept great Triumphs of *Iuſting* and *Tourney*, during all that Moneth. In which ſpace it ſo fell out, that *Sir* IAMES PARKER, and HVGH VAVGHAN (one of the Kings Gentlemen-Vſhers) hauing had a Controuerſie touching certaine *Armes*, that the *King* at *Armes* had giuen VAVGHAN, were appointed to runne ſome *Courſes* one againſt an other. And by accident of a faultie Helmet, that PARKER had on, hee was ſtricken into the mouth at the firſt courſe, ſo that his tongue was borne vnto the hinder part of his head, in ſuch ſort that hee died preſently vpon the Place. Which becauſe of the Controuerſie precedent, and the Death that followed, was accounted amongſt the *Vulgar*, as a *Combate* or Tryall of Right. The King, towards the end of this Summer, hauing put his Forces, wherewith hee meant to inuade *France*, in readineſſe, (but ſo as they were not yet met or muſtered together) ſent VRSVVICK (now made his *Almoner*) and *Sir* IOHN RISLEY, to MAXIMILIAN; to let him know, that hee was in Armes, ready to paſſe the Seas into *France*; and did but expect to heare from him, when and where he did appoint to ioyne with him, according to his promiſe made vnto him by COVNTEBALT, his *Ambaſſador*.

The *Engliſh Ambaſſadors*, hauing repaired to MAXIMILIAN, did finde his power and promiſe at a very great diſtance; hee being vtterly vnprouided of *Men*, *Money*, and *Armes*, for any ſuch enterprize. For, MAXIMILIAN, hauing neither *Wing* to flie on (for that his Patrimony of *Auſtria* was not in his hands, his Father beeing then liuing: And on the other ſide, his *Matrimoniall* Territories of *Flanders* being partly in Dowre to his *Mother-in-Law*, and partly not ſeruiceable, in reſpect of the late *Rebellions*) was thereby deſtitute of meanes to enter into Warre. The *Ambaſ-*

ſadors ſawe this well; but wiſely thought fit to aduertiſe the King thereof, rather then to returne themſelues, till the Kings further pleaſure were knowne: The rather, for that MAXIMILIAN himſelfe ſpake as great, as euer hee did before, and entertained them with dilatory Anſwers; ſo as the formall part of their *Ambaſſage*, might well warrant and require their further ſtay. The King hereupon (who doubted as much before, and ſawe through his buſineſſe from the beginning) wrote backe to the *Ambaſſadors*, commending their diſcretion in not returning, and willing them to keepe the State wherein they found MAXIMILIAN, as a Secret, till they heard further from him; And meane while went on with his Voyage Royall for *France*, ſuppreſsing for a time this Aduertiſement touching MAXIMILIAN's pouertie and diſabilitie.

By this time, was drawne together a great and puiſſant Armie into the Citie of *London*. In which were THOMAS *Marqueſſe Dorſet*, THOMAS *Earle* of *Arundell*, THOMAS *Earle* of *Derby*, GEORGE *Earle* of *Shrewsbury*, EDMOND *Earle* of *Suffolke*, EDVVARD *Earle* of *Deuonſhire*, GEORGE *Earle* of *Kent*, the *Earle* of *Eſſex*, THOMAS *Earle* of *Ormond*, with a great number of *Barons*, *Knightes*, and Principall *Gentlemen*; and amongſt them, RICHARD THOMAS, much noted for the braue Troupes, that hee brought out of *Wales*; The Armie riſing in the whole to the number of fiue and twenty thouſand *Foot*, and ſixteene hundred *Horſe*. Ouer which, the King (conſtant in his accuſtomed truſt and imployment) made IASPER *Duke* of *Bedford*, and IOHN *Earle* of *Oxford*, Generalls vnder his owne Perſon. The ninth of *September*, in the eighth yeare of his Raigne, hee departed from *Greenwich*, towards the Sea; all men wondring, that hee tooke that Seaſon (beeing

ſo

ſo neare winter) to begin the Warre; and ſome thereupon gathering it was a Signe, that the Warre would not bee long. Neuertheleſſe, the King gaue out the contrarie, thus: *That he intending not to make a Summer buſineſſe of it, but a reſolute Warre (without terme prefixed) vntill hee recouered* France; *it skilled not much when hee began it: eſpecially, hauing* Calice *at his backe; where he might winter, if the reaſon of the Warre ſo required.* The ſixt of *October*, hee imbarqued at *Sandwich*; and the ſame day tooke land at *Calice*: which was the *Rendez-vous*, where all his Forces were aſsigned to meet. But in this his Iourney towards the Sea ſide (wherein, for the cauſe that we ſhall now ſpeake of, he houered ſo much the longer) hee had receiued Letters from the Lord CORDES: who the hotter he was againſt the *Engliſh* in time of *Warre*, had the more credit in a Negociation of *Peace*; and beſides was held a man open, and of good faith. In which Letters there was made an Ouerture of Peace from the *French King*, with ſuch Conditions, as were ſomewhat to the Kings Taſte: but this was carried at the firſt with wonderfull ſecrecie. The King was no ſooner come to *Calice*, but the calme windes of *Peace* began to blowe. For, firſt, the *Engliſh Ambaſſadors* returned out of *Flanders* from MAXIMILIAN; and certified the King, that he was not to hope for any aide from MAXIMILIAN, for that hee was altogether improuided. His will was good; but hee lacked money. And this was made knowne, and ſpread through the Army. And although the *Engliſh* were therewithall nothing diſmaied; and that it bee the manner of *Souldiers*, *vpon bad newes to ſpeake the more brauely*: yet neuertheleſſe, it was a kind of *Preparatiue* to a Peace. Inſtantly in the neck of this (as the King had laid it) came newes, that FERDINANDO and ISABELLA, Kings of *Spaine*, had concluded a Peace with King CHARLES; and

and that CHARLES had reſtored vnto them the Counties of *Ruſsignon* and *Perpignian*, which formerly were *Morgaged* by IOHN King of *Arragon* (FERDINANDOES Father) vnto *France*, for three hundred thouſand Crownes: which debt was alſo, vpon this Peace, by CHARLES clearely releaſed. This came alſo handſomely to put on the Peace: both becauſe ſo Potent a *Confederate* was fallen off, and becauſe it was a faire example of a Peace bought; ſo as the King ſhould not bee the ſole Merchant in this *Peace*. Vpon theſe *Aires* of *Peace*, the King was content, that the Biſhop of Exceſter, and the Lord DAVBIGNEY (Gouernour of *Calice*) ſhould giue a meeting vnto the Lord CORDES, for the *Treatie* of a *Peace*. But himſelfe neuertheleſſe, and his Armie, the fifteenth of *October*, remooued from *Calice*, and in foure dayes march ſate him downe before *Bulloigne*.

During this Siege of *Bulloigne* (which continued neare a Moneth) there paſſed no memorable Action, nor Accident of Warre: onely Sir IOHN SAVAGE, a valiant Captaine, was ſlaine, riding about the Walls of the Towne, to take a View. The Towne was both well fortified, and well manned; yet it was diſtreſſed, and readie for an Aſſault. Which if it had beene giuen (as was thought) would haue coſt much Bloud; but yet the Towne would haue beene carried in the end. Meane while, a Peace was concluded by the *Commiſsioners*, to continue for both the Kings Liues. Where there was no Article of importance; being in effect, rather a *Bargaine*, then a *Treatie*. For, all things remayned as they were: ſaue that there ſhould bee payd to the King ſeuen hundred fortie fiue thouſand Duckats in preſent, for his Charges in that Iourney; and fiue and twentie thouſand Crownes yearely, for his Charges ſuſtained in

in the Aides of the *Britons*. For which *Annuall*, though he had MAXIMILIAN bound before for thoſe Charges; yet hee counted the alteration of the Hand, as much as the principall Debt. And beſides, it was left ſomewhat indefinitely, when it ſhould determine or expire: which made the *Engliſh* eſteeme it as a *Tribute*, carried vnder faire Tearmes. And the truth is, it was payd both to the King, and to his Sonne King HENRY the Eight, longer then it could continue vpon any Computation of Charges. There were alſo aſsigned by the *French King*, vnto all the King's principall *Counſellors*, great *Penſions*, beſides rich Gifts for the preſent. Which whether the King did permit, to ſaue his owne Purſe from Rewards, or to communicate the Enuie of a Buſineſſe, that was diſpleaſing to his People, was diuerſly interpreted. For certainely, the King had no great fanſie to owne this *Peace*. And therefore, a little before it was concluded, he had vnder-hand procured ſome of his beſt *Captaines*, and *Men of Warre*, to aduiſe him to a *Peace* vnder their Hands, in an earneſt manner, in the nature of a *Supplication*. But, the truth is, this *Peace* was welcome to both Kings. To CHARLES, for that it aſſured vnto him the poſſeſsion of *Britaine*, and freed the enterpriſe of *Naples*. To HENRY, for that it filled his Coffers; and that hee foreſaw at that time a ſtorme of inward troubles comming vpon him: which preſently after brake forth. But it gaue no leſſe diſcontent to the *Nobilitie*, and principall perſons of the *Armie*; who had many of them ſold or engaged their Eſtates, vpon the hopes of the Warre. They ſtucke not to ſay, *That the King cared not to plume his Nobilitie and People, to feather himſelfe.* And ſome made themſelues merrie with that the *King* had ſaid in Parliament: *That after the Warre was once begun, he doubted not but to make it pay it ſelfe*; ſaying, hee had kept promiſe.

Hauing

Hauing riſen from *Bulloigne*, hee went to *Calice*, where hee ſtayed ſome time. From whence alſo hee wrote Letters, (which was a Curteſie that hee ſometimes vſed) to the *Maior* of *London*, and the *Aldermen* his brethren; halfe bragging, what great ſummes hee had obtayned for the *Peace*; knowing well, that full *Cofers* of the *King*, is euer good Newes to *London*. And better Newes it would haue beene, if their *Beneuolence* had beene but a *Loane*. And vpon the ſeuenteenth of *December* following, hee returned to *Weſtminſter*, where hee kept his *Chriſtmaſſe*.

Soone after the Kings returne, hee ſent the *Order* of the *Garter*, to ALPHONSO *Duke* of *Calabria*, eldeſt ſonne to FERDINANDO King of *Naples*; An honour ſought by that *Prince*, to hold him vp in the eyes of the *Italians*: Who, expecting the Armes of CHARLES, made great accompt of the Amitie of *England*, for a Bridle to *France*. It was receiued by ALPHONSO, with all the Ceremonie and Pomp that could bee deuiſed; as things vſe to be carried, that are intended for Opinion. It was ſent by VRSVVICK: vpon whom the King beſtowed this *Ambaſſage*, to helpe him, after many drie Employments.

AT this time the King began againe to be haunted with *Sprites*, by the *Magicke* and curious Arts of the *Lady* MARGARET: Who rayſed vp the *Ghoſt* of RICHARD, Duke of *Yorke*, ſecond Sonne to King EDVVARD the Fourth, to walke and vex the King. This was a finer *Counterfeit Stone*, then LAMBERT SIMNELL; better done, and worne vpon greater hands; beeing graced after, with the wearing of a King of *France*, and a King of *Scotland*, not of a *Ducheſſe* of *Burgundie* onely. And for SIMNELL, there was not much in him, more then that hee

hee was a handſome *Boy*, and did not ſhame his *Robes*. But this *Youth* (of whom wee are now to ſpeake) was ſuch a *Mercuriall*, as the like hath ſeldome been knowne; and could make his owne Part, if at any time hee chanced to bee out. Wherefore, this beeing one of the ſtrangeſt Examples of a *Perſonation*, that euer was in *Elder* or *Later* Times; it deſerueth to bee diſcouered, and related at the full: Although the Kings manner of ſhewing things, by Peeces and by *Darke Lights*, hath ſo muffled it, that it hath left it almoſt as a *Myſterie* to this day.

The *Lady* MARGARET (whom the Kings Friends called IVNO, becauſe ſhee was to him as IVNO was to ÆNEAS, ſtirring both *Heauen* and *Hell*, to doe him miſchiefe) for a foundation of her particular Practices againſt him, did continually, by all meanes poſsible, nouriſh, maintaine, and divulge the flying Opinion, That RICHARD, *Duke* of *Yorke* (ſecond Sonne to EDVVARD the Fourth) was not murthered in the *Tower* (as was giuen out) but ſaued aliue; For that thoſe, who were imployed in that barbarous Fact, hauing deſtroyed the elder Brother, were ſtricken with remorſe and compaſsion towards the younger, and ſet him priuily at libertie, to ſeeke his Fortune. This *Lure* ſhee caſt abroad, thinking that this Fame and Belief (together with the freſh Example of LAMBERT SIMNELL) would draw at one time, or other, ſome *Birds* to ſtrike vpon it. Shee vſed likewiſe a further diligence, not committing all to *Chance*. For, ſhee had ſome ſecret *Eſpials* (like to the *Turkes Commiſsioners* for Children of *Tribute*) to looke abroad for handſome and gracefull Youths, to make PLANTAGENETS, and *Dukes* of *York*. At the laſt ſhee did light on one, in whom all things met, as one would wiſh, to ſerue her turne, for a *Counterfeit* of RICHARD, Duke of *York*.

This was PERKIN WARBECK; whoſe Aduentures wee ſhall now deſcribe. For, firſt, the yeares agreed well. Secondly, hee was a *Youth* of fine fauour, and ſhape. But, more then that, hee had ſuch a craftie and bewitching faſhion, both to mooue *Pitie*, and to induce *Beliefe*, as was like a kind of *Faſcination*, and *Inchantment*, to thoſe that ſaw him, or heard him. Thirdly, hee had beene from his Child-hood ſuch a *Wanderer*, or (as the King called him) ſuch a *Land-loper*, as it was extreme hard to hunt out his *Neſt* and *Parents*. Neither againe could any man, by companie or conuerſing with him, bee able to ſay or detect well what hee was; he did ſo flit from place to place. Laſtly, there was a *Circumſtance* (which is mentioned by one that wrote in the ſame time) that is very likely to haue made ſomewhat to the matter; which is, That King EDVVARD the Fourth was his *God-father*. Which, as it is ſomewhat ſuſpicious, for a wanton *Prince* to become Goſsip in ſo meane a Houſe; and might make a man thinke, that hee might indeed haue in him ſome baſe Bloud of the Houſe of YORKE: ſo at the leaſt (though that were not) it might giue the occcaſion to the *Boy*, in being called *King* EDVVARDS *God-ſonne*, or perhaps in ſport, *King* EDVVARDS *Sonne*, to entertayne ſuch Thoughts into his Head. For, *Tutor* hee had none (for ought that appeares) as LAMBERT SIMNELL had, vntill hee came vnto the *Lady* MARGARET, who inſtructed him.

Thus therefore it came to paſſe: There was a Townes-man of *Tourney*, that had borne office in that Towne, whoſe name was IOHN OSBECKE, a *Conuert-Iew*, married to KATHERINE DE FARO; whoſe buſineſſe drew him, to liue for a time with his wife at *London*, in *King* EDVVARD the fourths daies. During which time hee had a ſonne by her: and being knowne in Court, the King either out of a religious Noble-

Nobleneſſe, becauſe hee was a *Conuert*, or vpon ſome priuate acquaintance, did him the Honour, as to bee *Godfather* to his Child, and named him PETER. But, afterwards, prooving a dainty and effeminate *Youth*, hee was commonly called by the *Diminutiue* of his name, PETER-KIN, or PERKIN. For, as for the name of WARBECKE, it was giuen him when they did but gueſſe at it, before examinations had been taken. But yet hee had been ſo much talked on by that name, as it ſtucke by him after his true name of OSBECKE was knowne. While hee was a young child, his Parents returned with him to *Tourney*. Then was hee placed in a houſe of a kinſman of his, called IOHN STENBECK, at *Antwerpe*: and ſo roued vp and down betweene *Antwerp* and *Tourney*, and other Townes of *Flanders*, for a good time; liuing much in *Engliſh Companie*, and hauing the *Engliſh* Tongue perfect. In which time, beeing growne a comely *Youth*, hee was brought by ſome of the eſpialls of the Ladie MARGARET vnto her Preſence. Who viewing him well, and ſeeing that hee had a Face and Perſonage, that would beare a noble fortune: And finding him otherwiſe of a fine ſpirit, and winning behauiour; thought ſhee had now found a curious *Piece* of *Marble*, to carue out an *Image* of a *Duke* of *Yorke*. Shee kept him by her a great while; but, with extreame ſecrecy. The while, ſhee inſtructed him, by many *Cabinet-Conferences*. Firſt, in *Princely* behauiour and geſture; teaching him how hee ſhould keepe *State*, and yet with a modeſt ſenſe of his misfortunes. Then ſhee informed him of all the circumſtances and particulars, that concerned the Perſon of RICHARD Duke of *Yorke*, which hee was to act: Deſcribing vnto him the *Perſonages*, *Lineaments*, and *Features* of the King and Queen, his pretended Parents; and of his Brother, and Siſters, and diuers others, that were neereſt him in his Child-

hood; together with all paſſages, ſome ſecret, ſome common, that were fit for a Childs memorie, vntill the death of King EDVVARD. Then ſhe added the particulars of the time, from the Kings death, vntill hee and his brother were committed to the Tower, aſwell during the time hee was abroad, as while he was in *Sanctuarie*. As for the times while hee was in the *Tower*, and the manner of his Brothers death, and his owne eſcape; ſhee knew they were things that a verie fewe could controll. And therefore ſhee taught him, onely to tell a ſmooth and likely *Tale* of thoſe matters; warning him not to vary from it. It was agreed likewiſe betweene them, what account he ſhould giue of his *Peregrination* abroad; intermixing many things which were true, and ſuch as they knew others could teſtifie, for the credit of the reſt: but, ſtill making them to hang together, with the *Part* hee was to play. Shee taught him likewiſe how to auoid ſundry captious and tempting queſtions, which were like to bee asked of him. But, in this ſhee found him of himſelfe ſo nimble and ſhifting, as ſhee truſted much to his owne wit and readineſſe; and therefore laboured the leſſe in it. Laſtly, ſhee rayſed his thoughts with ſome preſent rewards, and further promiſes; ſetting before him chiefly the glorie, and fortune of a Crowne, if things went well; and a ſure refuge to her *Court*, if the worſt ſhould fall. After ſuch time as ſhee thought hee was perfect in his *Leſſon*, ſhee began to caſt with her ſelfe from what coaſt this *Blazing-ſtarre* ſhould firſt appeare, and at what time it muſt bee vpon the *Horizon* of *Ireland*; for, there had the like *Meteor* ſtrong influence before: The time of the *Apparition* to bee, when the King ſhould bee engaged into a Warre with *France*. But well ſhee knew, that whatſoeuer ſhould come from her, would bee held ſuſpected. And therefore, if hee ſhould goe out of *Flanders* immediately into *Ireland*

land, ſhee might bee thought to haue ſome hand in it. And beſides, the time was not yet ripe; for that the two Kings were then vpon tearmes of *Peace*. Therefore ſhee wheel'd about; and to put all ſuſpicion a far off, and loth to keepe him any longer by her (for that ſhee knew *Secrets* are not long liued) ſhee ſent him vnknowne into *Portugall*, with the Lady BRAMPTON, an *Engliſh Ladie*, that embarqued for *Portugall* at that time; with ſome *Priuado* of her owne, to haue an eye vpon him: and there hee was to remaine, and to expect her further directions. In the meane time, ſhee omitted not to prepare things for his better welcome, and accepting; not onely in the Kingdome of *Ireland*, but in the *Court* of *France*. Hee continued in *Portugall* about a yeare; and, by that time, the King of *England* called his *Parliament* (as hath beene ſaid) and declared open Warre againſt *France*. Now did the *Signe* raigne, and the *Conſtellation* was come, vnder which PERKIN ſhould appeare. And therefore hee was ſtraight ſent vnto by the *Ducheſſe*, to goe for *Ireland*, according to the firſt deſignement. In *Ireland* hee did arriue at the Towne of *Corke*. When hee was thither come, his owne *Tale* was (when hee made his *Confeſsion* afterwards) That the *Iriſh-men*, finding him in ſome good Clothes, came flocking about him, and bare him downe, that hee was the *Duke* of *Clarence*, that had beene there before; And after, that hee was RICHARD the Thirds baſe ſonne; And laſtly, that he was RICHARD *Duke* of *Yorke*, ſecond ſonne to EDVVARD the Fourth: But that hee (for his part) renounced all theſe things, and offered to ſweare vpon the holy *Euangeliſts*, that hee was no ſuch man; till, at laſt, they forced it vpon him, and bade him feare nothing, and ſo forth. But the truth is, that immediatly vpon his comming into *Ireland*, hee tooke vpon him the ſaid *Perſon* of the

Duke

Duke of *York*, and drew vnto him *Complices*, and *Partakers*, by all the meanes hee could deuiſe: Inſomuch, as hee wrote his Letters vnto the *Earles* of *Deſmond* and *Kildare*, to come in to his *Aide*, and bee of his *Partie*; the *Originals* of which Letters are yet extant.

Somewhat before this time, the *Ducheſſe* had alſo gayned vnto her, a neare ſeruant of King HENRY's owne, one STEPHEN FRION, his *Secretarie* for the *French Tongue*; an actiue man, but turbulent, and diſcontented. This FRION had fled ouer to CHARLES the *French King*, and put himſelfe into his ſeruice, at ſuch time as hee began to bee in open enmitie with the King. Now King CHARLES, when he vnderſtood of the Perſon and Attempts of PERKIN (readie of himſelfe to embrace all aduantages againſt the King of *England*; inſtigated by FRION, and formerly prepared by the Ladie MARGARET) forthwith diſpatched one LVCAS, and this FRION, in the nature of *Ambaſſadors* to PERKIN; to aduertiſe him of the Kings good inclination to him, and that hee was reſolued to aide him, to recouer his right againſt King HENRY, an *Vſurper* of *England*, and an Enemie of *France*; and wiſhed him, to come ouer vnto him at *Paris*. PERKIN thought himſelfe in heauen, now that hee was inuited by ſo great a King, in ſo honourable a manner; And imparting vnto his Friends in *Ireland* for their incouragement, how *Fortune* called him, and what great hopes hee had, ſayled preſently into *France*. When hee was come to the *Court* of *France*, the King receiued him with great honour; ſaluted, and Stiled him by the name of the *Duke* of *Yorke*; lodged him, and accommodated him in great *State*; And the better to giue him the repreſentation and the countenance of a *Prince*, aſſigned him a *Guard* for his Perſon, whereof the Lord CONGRESALL was Captaine. The *Courtiers*

tiers likewiſe (though it bee ill mocking with the *French*) applyed themſelues to their Kings Bent, ſeeing there was reaſon of *State* for it. At the ſame time there repaired vnto PERKIN diuers *Engliſhmen* of Qualitie ; Sir GEORGE NEVILE, Sir IOHN TAYLOR, and about one hundred more : and amongſt the reſt, this STEPHEN FRION, of whom wee ſpake ; who followed his fortune both then and for a long time after, and was indeed his principall *Counſellor*, and *Inſtrument* in all his Proceedings. But all this, on the *French Kings* part, was but a Tricke, the better to bow King HENRY to Peace. And therefore vpon the firſt Graine of *Incenſe*, that was ſacrificed vpon the *Altar* of *Peace* at *Bulloigne*, PERKIN was ſmoaked away. Yet would not the *French King* deliuer him vp to King HENRY (as hee was laboured to doe) for his Honors ſake, but warned him away, and diſmiſſed him. And PERKIN on his part was as readie to bee gone, doubting hee might bee caught vp vnder-hand. Hee therefore tooke his way into *Flanders*, vnto the *Ducheſſe* of *Burgundie* ; pretending, that, hauing beene variouſly toſſed by *Fortune*, hee directed his courſe thither, as to a ſafe *Harbour* : No wayes taking knowledge, that hee had euer beene there before, but as if that had beene his firſt addreſſe. The *Ducheſſe*, on the other part, made it as new and ſtrange to ſee him : pretending (at the firſt) that ſhee was taught and made wiſe by the example of LAMBERT SIMNELL, how ſhee did admit of any *Counterfeit Stuffe* ; though euen in that (ſhe ſaid) ſhee was not fully ſatisfied. Shee pretended at the firſt (and that was euer in the preſence of others) to poſe him and ſift him, thereby to trie whether hee were indeed the very *Duke* of *York*, or no. But, ſeeming to receiue full ſatisfaction by his anſweres, ſhee then fained her ſelfe to bee tranſported with a kind of aſtoniſhment, mixt

mixt of *Ioy* and *Wonder*, at his miraculous deliuerance; receiuing him, as if hee were riſen from Death to Life: and inferring, that GOD, who had in ſuch wonderfull manner preſerued him from Death, did likewiſe reſerue him for ſome great and proſperous *Fortune*. As for his diſmiſsion out of *France*, they interpreted it not, as if hee were detected or neglected for a *Counterfeit Deceiuer*; but contrariwiſe, that it did ſhew manifeſtly vnto the World, that hee was ſome *Great matter*; for that it was his abandoning, that (in effect) made the *Peace*: beeing no more but the ſacrificing of a poore diſtreſſed *Prince*, vnto the Vtilitie and Ambition of two Mightie *Monarchs*. Neither was PERKIN for his part wanting to himſelfe, either in gracious and princely behauiour, or in readie and appoſite anſweres, or in contenting and careſsing thoſe that did applie themſelues vnto him, or in prettie ſcorne and diſdaine to thoſe that ſeemed to doubt of him; but in all things did notably acquite himſelfe: Inſomuch as it was generally belieued (aſwell amongſt great Perſons, as amongſt the *Vulgar*) that hee was indeed *Duke* RICHARD. Nay, himſelfe, with long and continuall counterfeiting, and with oft telling a *Lye*, was turned by habite almoſt into the thing hee ſeemed to bee; and from a *Lyer*, to a *Belieuer*. The *Ducheſſe* therefore (as in a caſe out of doubt) did him all princely honour, calling him alwaies by the name of her *Nephew*, and giuing him the *Delicate Title* of the *White-roſe* of *England*; and appointed him a *Guard* of thirtie Perſons, *Halberdiers*, clad in a *Party-coloured Liuerie* of *Murrey* and *Blue*, to attend his Perſon. Her *Court* likewiſe, and generally the *Dutch* and Strangers in their vſage towards him, expreſſed no leſſe reſpect.

The Newes hereof came blazing and thundering ouer into *England*, that the *Duke* of *Yorke* was ſure aliue.

aliue. As for the name of PERKIN WARBECK, it was not at that time come to light, but all the newes ranne vpon the *Duke* of *Yorke*; that hee had beene entertayned in *Ireland*, bought and ſold in *France*, and was now plainely auowed, and in great honour in *Flanders*. Theſe *Fames* tooke hold of diuers; In ſome vpon diſcontent, in ſome vpon ambition, in ſome vpon leuitie and deſire of change, and in ſome few vpon conſcience and beliefe; but in moſt vpon ſimplicitie; and in diuers out of dependance vpon ſome of the better ſort, who did in ſecret fauour and nouriſh theſe bruits. And it was not long, ere theſe rumours of *Noueltie*, had begot en others of *Scandall* and *Murmur* againſt the King, and his gouernement; taxing him for a great *Taxer* of his *People*, and diſcountenancer of his *Nobilitie*. The loſſe of *Britaine*, and the Peace with *France* were not forgotten. But chiefly they fell vpon the wrong that hee did his *Queene*, in that hee did not raigne in her *Right*. Wherefore they ſaid, that GOD had now brought to light a *Maſculine-Branch* of the Houſe of YORKE, that would not bee at his Curteſie, howſoeuer hee did depreſſe his poore *Ladie*. And yet (as it fareth in things which are currant with the *Multitude*, and which they effect) theſe Fames grew ſo generall, as the *Authours* were loſt in the generalitie of *Speakers*. They beeing like running *Weeds*, that haue no certaine roote; or like *Footings* vp and downe, impoſſible to bee traced. But after a while, theſe ill *Humours* drew to an head, and ſetled ſecretly in ſome eminent *Perſons*; which were Sir WILLIAM STANLEY Lord *Chamberlaine* of the Kings *Houſhold*, The Lord FITZ-WATER, Sir SIMON MOVNTFORT, Sir THOMAS THWAITES. Theſe entred into a ſecret Conſpiracie to fauour *Duke* RICHARDS Title. Neuertheleſſe none engaged their fortunes in this buſineſſe openly, but two; Sir

ROBERT CLIFFORD, and Maſter WILLIAM BARLEY, who ſailed ouer into *Flanders*, ſent indeed from the *Partie* of the Conſpiratours here, to vnderſtand the truth of thoſe things, that paſſed there, and not without ſome helpe of monies from hence; *Prouiſionally* to bee deliuered, if they found and were ſatisfied, that there was truth in theſe pretences. The perſon of *Sir* ROBERT CLIFFORD (being a Gentleman of *Fame* and *Familie*) was extremely welcome to the *Ladie* MARGARET. Who after ſhee had conference with him, brought him to the ſight of PERKIN, with whom hee had often ſpeach and diſcourſe. So that in the ende wonne either by the *Ducheſſe*, to affect, or by PERKIN to belieue, hee wrote backe into *England*, that he knew the Perſon of RICHARD *Duke* of *Yorke*, as well as hee knew his owne; and that this *yong-man* was vndoubtedly hee. By this meanes all things grew prepared to Reuolt and Sedition here, and the *Conſpiracie* came to haue a *Correſpondence* betweene *Flanders* and *England*.

The King on his part was not aſleepe; but to Arme or leuie *Forces* yet, he thought would but ſhew feare, and doe this *Idoll* too much worſhip. Neuertheleſſe the *Ports* hee did ſhut vp, or at leaſt kept a *Watch* on them, that none ſhould paſſe to or fro that was ſuſpected. But for the reſt, he chooſe to worke by *Countermine*. His purpoſes were two; the one, to lay open the Abuſe: The other, to breake the knot of the *Conſpirators*. To detect the *Abuſe*, there were but two wayes; The firſt, to make it manifeſt to the world, that the *Duke* of *Yorke* was indeed murthered: The other, to prooue, that were he dead or aliue, yet PERKIN was a *Counterfeit*. For the firſt, thus it ſtood. There were but foure *Perſons* that could ſpeake vpon knowledge, to the murther of the Duke of *Yorke*: *Sir* IAMES TIRRELL (the employed-man from King RI-

CHARD

CHARD) IOHN DIGHTON, and MILES FORREST, his ſeruants (the two Butchers or Tormentors) and the *Prieſt* of the *Tower*, that buried them. Of which foure, MILES FOREST, and the *Prieſt* were dead, and there remained aliue only *Sir* IAMES TIRREL, and IOHN DIGHTON. Theſe two the King cauſed to bee committed to the *Tower*, and examined touching the manner of the death of the two innocent *Princes*. They agreed both in a *Tale*, (as the King gaue out) to this effect: That King RICHARD hauing directed his warrant for the putting of them to death to BRACKENBVRIE the *Lieutenant* of the *Tower*, was by him refuſed. Whereupon the King directed his Warrant to *Sir* IAMES TIRREL, to receiue the Keyes of the *Tower* from the *Lieutenant* (for the ſpace of a night) for the Kings ſpeciall ſeruice. That *Sir* IAMES TIRREL accordingly repaired to the *Tower* by night, attended by his two *Seruants* afore-named, whom hee had choſen for that purpoſe. That himſelfe ſtood at the ſtaire-foot, and ſent theſe two *Villaines* to execute the murther. That they ſmothered them in their bed; & that done, called vp their Maſter to ſee their naked dead bodies, which they had laide foorth. That they were buried vnder the *Staires*, and ſome ſtones caſt vpon them. That when the report was made to King RICHARD, that his will was done, hee gaue *Sir* IAMES TIRREL great thankes; but tooke exception to the place of their buriall, beeing too baſe for them that were *Kings* children. Whereupon an other night by the Kings warrant renewed, their bodies were remoued by the *Prieſt* of the *Tower*, and buried by him in ſome place, which (by meanes of the *Prieſts* death ſoone after) could not be knowne. Thus much was then deliuered abroad, to be the effect of thoſe *Examinations*. But, the King neuertheleſſe made no vſe of them in any of his *Declarations*; whereby (as

it ſeemes) thoſe *Examinations* let the buſineſſe ſomewhat perplexed. And as for *Sir* IAMES TIRREL, hee was ſoone after beheaded in the *Tower-yard*, for other matters of *Treaſon*. But IOHN DIGHTON (who it ſeemeth ſpake beſt for the King) was forthwith ſet at libertie, and was the Principall meanes of diuulging this *Tradition*. Therefore this kind of Proofe beeing left ſo naked, the King vſed the more diligence in the latter, for the tracing of PERKIN. To this purpoſe, hee ſent abroad into ſeuerall parts, and eſpecially into *Flanders*, diuers ſecret and nimble *Scoutes* and *Spies*; ſome faining themſelues to flie ouer vnto PERKIN, and to adhere vnto him; and ſome vnder other pretences, to learne, ſearch, and diſcouer all the circumſtances and particulars of PERKINS Parents, Birth, Perſon, Trauailes vp and downe; and in briefe, to haue a *Iournall* (as it were) of his life and dooings. Hee furniſhed theſe his employed-men liberally with Money, to draw on and reward Intelligences: giuing them alſo in charge, to aduertiſe continually what they found, and neuertheleſſe ſtill to goe on. And euer as one Aduertiſement and Diſcouerie called vp another, hee employed other new Men, where the Buſineſſe did require it. Others hee employed in a more ſpeciall nature and truſt, to be his *Pioners* in the maine *Counter-mine*. Theſe were directed to inſinuate themſelues into the familiaritie and confidence of the principall *Perſons* of the *Partie* in *Flanders*, and ſo to learne what *Aſſociates* they had, and *Correſpondents*, either heere in *England*, or abroad; and how farre euery one ingaged, and what new ones they meant afterwards to trie, or board. And as this for the *Perſons*; ſo for the *Actions* themſelues, to diſcouer to the Bottome (as they could) the vtmoſt of PERKINS and the *Conſpiratours* their Intentions, Hopes, and Practices. Theſe latter *Beſt-bee-truſt-Spies* had

had ſome of them further inſtructions, to practiſe and draw of the beſt Friends and Seruants of PERKIN, by making remonſtrance to them, how weakely his Enterprize and Hopes were built, and with how prudent and potent a King they had to deale; and to reconcile them to the King, with promiſe of *Pardon*, and good Conditions of *Reward*. And (aboue the reſt) to aſſayle, ſappe, and worke into the conſtancie of Sir ROBERT CLIFFORD; and to winne him (if they could) being the man that knew moſt of their ſecrets, and who beeing wonne away, would moſt appall and diſcourage the reſt, and in a manner breake the *Knot*.

There is a ſtrange *Tradition*; That the King being loſt in a *Wood* of Suſpicions, and not knowing whom to truſt, had both intelligence with the *Confeſſors* and *Chaplaines* of diuers great men, and for the better *Credit* of his *Eſpials* abroad with the contrarie ſide, did vſe to haue them curſed at PAVLS (by Name) amongſt the *Bead-roll* of the Kings Enemies, according to the Cuſtome of thoſe Times. Theſe *Eſpials* plyed their Charge ſo roundly, as the King had an *Anatomie* of PERKIN aliue; and was likewiſe well informed of the particular correſpondent *Conſpiratours* in *England*, and many other Myſteries were reuealed; and Sir ROBERT CLIFFORD in eſpeciall wonne to bee aſſured to the King, and induſtrious and officious for his ſeruice. The King therefore (receiuing a rich *Returne* of his diligence, and great ſatisfaction touching a number of Particulars) firſt diuulged and ſpred abroad the *Impoſture* and iuggling of PERKINS Perſon and Trauailes, with the Circumſtances thereof, throughout the *Realme*. Not by *Proclamation* (becauſe things were yet in Examination, and ſo might receiue the more or the leſſe) but by *Court-Fames*, which commonly print better then printed *Proclamations*. Then thought hee it alſo time to ſend an *Ambaſſage* vnto *Arch-*

Archduke PHILIP, into *Flanders*, for the abandoning and diſmiſſing of PERKIN. Heerein hee employed *Sir* EDWARD POYNINGS, and *Sir* WILLIAM WARHAM, *Doctor* of the *Canon Law*. The *Archduke* was the young, and gouerned by his Councell: before whom the *Ambaſſadours* had audience, and *Doctor* WARHAM ſpake in this manner.

MY *Lords, the King our* Maſter *is very ſorie, that* England *and your Countrey here of* Flanders *hauing beene counted as Man and Wife for ſo long time, now this Countrey of all others ſhould be the Stage, where a baſe Counterfeit ſhould play the part of a King of* England; *not onely to his Graces diſquiet and diſhonour, but to the ſcorne and reproach of all Soueraigne Princes. To counterfeit the dead Image of a King in his Coyne, is an high Offence by all Lawes. But to counterfeit the liuing Image of a King in his Perſon, exceedeth all Falſifications, except it ſhould bee that of a* MAHOMET, *or an* Anti-Chriſt, *that counterfeit Diuine Honour. The King hath too great an Opinion of this ſage Counſell, to thinke that any of you is caught with this Fable (though way may be giuen by you to the paſſion of ſome) the thing in it ſelfe is ſo improbable. To ſet Teſtimonies aſide of the Death of* Duke RICHARD, *which the King hath vpon Record, plaine*

plaine and infallible (becauſe they may bee thought to bee in the Kings owne Power) let the thing teſtifie for it ſelfe. Senſe and Reaſon no Power can command. Is it poßible (trowe you) that King RICHARD ſhould damne his Soule, and foule his Name with ſo abominable a Murther, and yet not mend his Caſe? Or doe you thinke, that Men of Bloud (that were his Inſtruments) did turne to Pitty in the middeſt of their Execution? Whereas in cruell and ſauage Beaſts, and Men alſo, the firſt Draught of Bloud doth yet make them more fiecre, and enraged. Doe you not know, that the Bloudie Executioners of Tyrants doe goe to ſuch Errands, with an Halter about their necke: So that if they performe not, they are ſure to die for it? And doe you thinke, that theſe men would hazard their owne liues, for ſparing anothers? Admit they ſhould haue ſaued him: What ſhould they haue done with him? Turne him into London Streets, that the Watch-men or any Paſſenger that ſhould light vpon him, might carry him before a Iuſtice, and ſo all come to light? Or ſhould they haue kept him by them ſecretly? That ſurely would haue required a great deale of Care, Charge, and continuall Feares. But (my Lords) I labour too much in a cleare Buſi-

Buſineſſe. The King is ſo wiſe, and hath ſo good Friends abroad, as now hee knoweth Duke PERKIN from his Cradle. And becauſe hee is a great Prince, if you haue any good Poet here, hee can helpe him with Notes to write his Life; and to parallell him with LAMBERT SIMNELL, now the Kings Faulconer. And therefore (to ſpeake plainely to your Lordſhips) it is the ſtrangeſt thing in the VVorld, that the Lady MARGARET (excuſe vs, if wee name her, whoſe Malice to the King is both cauſeleſſe and endleſſe) ſhould now when ſhee is old, at the time when other VVomen giue ouer Childbearing, bring forth two ſuch Monſters; being not the Births of nine or tenne Moneths, but of many yeares. And whereas other naturall Mothers bring forth Children weake, and not able to helpe themſelues; ſhee bringeth forth tall Striplinges, able ſoone after their comming into the VVorld, to bid Battaile to mightie Kings. My Lords, wee ſtay vnwillingly vpon this Part. VVee would to GOD, that Lady would once taſte the Ioyes, which GOD Almightie doth ſerue vp vnto her, in beholding her Neece to Raigne in ſuch Honour, and with ſo much Royall Iſſue, which ſhee might bee pleaſed

to

to accompt as her owne. The Kings Requeſt vnto the Archduke, *and your* Lordſhips, *might bee; That according to the Example of King* CHARLES, *who hath alreadie diſcarded him, you would baniſh this vnworthie Fellow out of your Dominions. But becauſe the King may iuſtly expect more from an ancient* Confederate, *then from a new reconciled* Enemie; *hee maketh his Requeſt vnto you, to deliuer him vp into his hands.* Pyrates *and* Impoſtures *of this ſort, beeing fit to bee accounted the Common* Enemies *of* Mankind, *and no wayes to bee protected by the Law of* Nations.

After ſome time of Deliberation, the *Ambaſſadours* receiued this ſhort Anſwere.

THat the Archduke, *for the loue of King* HENRY, *would in no ſort aide or aſſiſt the pretended* Duke, *but in all things conſerue the Amitie hee had with the King. But for the* Ducheſſe Dowager, *ſhee was abſolute in the Lands of her* Dowrie, *and that hee could not let her to diſpoſe of her owne.*

THe King, vpon the returne of the *Ambaſſadours*, was nothing ſatisfied with this Anſwere. For well he knew, that a *Patrimoniall Dowrie* carried no part of *Soueraignetie*, or Command of *Forces*. Beſides, the *Ambaſſadours* told him plainely, that they ſaw the *Ducheſſe* had a great *Partie* in the *Arch-Dukes* Counſell; and that howſoeuer it was carried in a courſe of conniuence, yet the *Arch-Duke* vnder hand gaue aide and furtherance to PERKIN. Wherefore (partly out of *Courage*, and partly out of *Policie*) the King forthwith baniſhed all *Flemmings* (as well their *Perſons*, as their *Wares*) out of his *Kingdome*; Commanding his Subiects likewiſe (and by name his *Merchants-Aduenturers*) which had a Reſiance in *Antwerpe*, to returne; tranſlating the *Mart* (which commonly followed the *Engliſh* Cloth) vnto *Calice*, and embarred alſo all further trade for the future. This the *King* did, being ſenſible in point of Honour, not to ſuffer a *Pretender* to the Crowne of *England*, to affront him ſo neare at hand, and hee to keepe termes of friendſhip with the *Countrie* where hee did ſet vp. But hee had alſo a further reach: for that hee knew well, that the Subiects of *Flanders* drew ſo great commoditie from the trade of *England*, as by this *Embargo* they would ſoone waxe wearie of PERKIN, and that the Tumults of *Flanders* had beene ſo late and freſh, as it was no time for the *Prince* to diſpleaſe the *People*. Neuertheleſſe for formes ſake, by way of requitall, the *Arch-Duke* did likewiſe baniſh the *Engliſh* out of *Flanders*; which in effect was done to his hand.

The King being well aduertiſed, that PERKIN did more truſt vpon Friends and Partakers within the Realme, then vpon forraine Armes, thought it behooued him to applie the *Remedie*, where the *Diſeaſe* lay; and to proceed with ſeueritie againſt ſome of the

the principall *Conſpirators* here within the Realme; Thereby to purge the ill Humours in *England*, and to coole the Hopes in *Flanders*. Wherefore hee cauſed to bee apprehended (almoſt at an inſtant) IOHN RATCLIFFE Lord *Fitz-water*, *Sir* SIMON MOVNTFORT, *Sir* THOMAS THWAITES, WILLIAM DAWBIGNEY, ROBERT RATCLIFFE, THOMAS CHRESSENOR, and THOMAS ASTWOOD. All theſe were arraigned, conuicted and condemned for *High-Treaſon*, in adhering, and promiſing aide to PERKIN. Of theſe, the *Lord* FITZ-WATER was conueighed to *Calice*, and there kept in hold, and in hope of life, vntill ſoone after (either impatient, or betrayed) hee dealt with his Keeper to haue eſcaped, and thereupon was beheaded. But *Sir* SIMON MOVNTFORD, ROBERT RATCLIFFE, and WILLIAM DAWBIGNEY were beheaded immediatly after their Condemnation. The reſt were pardoned, together with many others *Clerkes* and *Laikes*, amongſt which were two *Dominican Friars*, and WILLIAM WORSELEY, *Deane* of *Paules*: which latter ſort paſſed Examination, but came not to publike triall.

The *Lord Chamberlaine* at that time was not touched; whether it were, that the King would not ſtirre too many humours at once, but (after the manner of good *Phiſicians*) purge the head laſt; Or that CLIFFORD (from whom moſt of theſe *Diſcoueries* came) reſerued that Piece for his owne comming ouer: ſignifying onely to the King in the meane time, that hee doubted there were ſome greater ones in the buſineſſe, whereof hee would giue the King further accompt when hee came to his preſence.

Vpon *Al-hallowes-day-euen* beeing now the tenth yeare of the Kings Raigne, the Kings ſecond ſonne

HENRY was created *Duke* of *Yorke*; and as well the *Duke*, as diuers others, *Noblemen*, *Knights-Batchlours*, and *Gentlemen* of Qualitie were made Knights of the *Bath*, according to the *Ceremonie*. Vpon the morrow after *Twelfth-Day*, the King remoued from *Weſtminſter* (where hee had kept his *Chriſtmas*) to the Tower of *London*. This hee did as ſoone as hee had aduertiſement, that *Sir* ROBERT CLIFFORD (in whoſe *Boſome* or *Budget* moſt of PERKINS ſecrets were layed vp) was come into *England*. And the place of the *Tower* was choſen to that end, that if CLIFFORD ſhould accuſe any of the *Great-ones*, they might without ſuſpicion, or noiſe, or ſending abroad of Warrants, bee preſently attached; The *Court* and *Priſon* beeing within the cincture of one Wall. After a day or two, the King drew vnto him a ſelected *Councell*, and admitted CLIFFORD to his preſence; who firſt fell downe at his feet, and in all humble manner craued the *Kings Pardon*, which the King then granted, though he were indeed ſecretly aſſured of his life before. Then commanded to tell his knowledge, hee did amongſt many others (of himſelfe, not interrogated) appeach *Sir* WILLIAM STANLEY, the *Lord Chamberlaine* of the Kings Houſhold.

The King ſeemed to be much amazed at the naming of this *Lord*, as if hee had heard the Newes of ſome ſtrange and fearefull *Prodigie*. To heare a *Man* that had done him ſeruice of ſo high a nature, as to ſaue his life, and ſet the Crowne vpon his head, a *Man*, that enioyed by his fauour and aduancement ſo great a fortune, both in Honour and Riches; a *Man*, that was tied vnto him in ſo neare a *Band* of alliance, his Brother hauing married the Kings Mother; and laſtly, a *Man*, to whom he had committed the truſt of his *Perſon*, in making him his *Chamberlaine*. That this *Man*, no wayes diſgraced, no wayes diſcontent, no wayes

put

put in feare, ſhould be falſe vnto him. CLIFFORD was required to ſay ouer againe, and againe, the *Particulars* of his accuſation; being warned, that in a matter ſo vnlikely, and that concerned ſo great a Seruant of the Kings, hee ſhould not in any wiſe go too farre. But the King finding that he did ſadly, and conſtantly (without heſitation or varying, and with thoſe ciuill Proteſtations that were fit) ſtand to that that hee had ſaid, offering to iuſtifie it vpon his ſoule and life; hee cauſed him to be remooued. And after hee had not a little bemoaned himſelfe vnto his Councell there preſent, gaue order that *Sir* WILLIAM STANLEY ſhould be reſtrained in his owne Chamber, where hee lay before, in the *Square Tower*. And the next day hee was examined by the Lords. Vpon his *Examination*, hee denied little of that wherewith hee was charged, nor endeauoured much to excuſe or extenuate his fault. So that (not very wiſely) thinking to make his Offence leſſe by *Confeſſion*, hee made it enough for *Condemnation*. It was conceiued, that hee truſted much to his former merits, and the intereſt that his Brother had in the King. But thoſe Helpes were ouer weighed by diuers things that made againſt him, and were predominant in the Kings nature and mind. Firſt, an *Ouer-merit*; for conuenient Merit, vnto which Reward may eaſily reach, doth beſt with Kings. Next, the ſence of his *Power*; for the King thought, that hee that could ſet him vp, was the more dangerous to pull him downe. Thirdly, the glimmering of a *Confiſcation*; for he was the richeſt *Subiect* for value in the Kingdome; There beeing found in his *Caſtle* of *Holt* forty thouſand Marks in readie Money, and Plate, beſides *Iewells*, *Houſhold-ſtuffe*, *Stockes* vpon his grounds, and other Perſonall Eſtate, exceeding great. And for his Reuenue in *Land* and *Fee*, it was three thouſand pounds a yeere of old Rent, a great matter in thoſe times

times. Laſtly, the Nature of the *Time*; for if the King had beene out of feare of his owne Eſtate, it was not vnlike he would haue ſpared his life. But the Cloud of ſo great a *Rebellion* hanging ouer his head, made him worke ſure. Wherefore after ſome ſixe weekes diſtance of time, which the King did Honorably interpoſe, both to giue ſpace to his Brothers Interceſſion, and to ſhew to the World, that hee had a conflict with himſelfe what hee ſhould doe; hee was arraigned of *High Treaſon*, and condemned, and preſently after beheaded.

Yet is it to this day left but in darke memorie, both what the Caſe of this *Noble Perſon* was, for which hee ſuffered; and what likewiſe was the ground and cauſe of his defection, and the alienation of his heart from the King. His *Caſe* was ſaid to bee this: That in diſcourſe betweene *Sir* ROBERT CLIFFORD and him, hee had ſaid; *That if hee were ſure, that that young man were King* EDWARDS *Sonne, hee would neuer beare Armes againſt him.* This *Caſe* ſeemes ſomewhat an hard Caſe, both in reſpect of the *Conditionall*, and in reſpect of the other words. But for the *Conditionall*, it ſeemeth the *Iudges* of that time (who were learned men, and the three chiefe of them of the *Priuy Councell*) thought it was a dangerous thing to admit *Ifs* and *Ands*, to qualifie words of *Treaſon*; whereby euery man might expreſſe his malice, and blanch his danger. And it was like to the *Caſe* (in the following times) of ELIZABETH BARTON, the *Holy-maide* of *Kent*: who had ſaid, *That if King* HENRY *the eighth did not take* KATHERINE *his Wife againe, hee ſhould bee depriued of his Crowne, and die the death of a Dogge.* And infinite *Caſes* may be put of like nature. Which (it ſeemeth) the graue *Iudges* taking into Conſideration, would not admit of *Treaſons* vpon *Condition*. And as for the *Poſitiue* words, *That hee would not beare Armes againſt*

againſt King EDWARDS *Sonne;* though the words ſeeme calme, yet it was a plaine and direct *Ouer-ruling* of the Kings Title, either by the *Line* of LANCASTER, or by *Act* of *Parliament.* Which (no doubt) pierced the King more, then if STANLEY had charged his *Lance* vpon him in the field. For if STANLEY would hold that opinion, that a ſonne of King EDWARD had ſtill the better Right, hee beeing ſo principall a *Perſon* of authoritie, and fauour about the King; it was to teach all *England*, to ſay as much. And therefore (as thoſe times were) that ſpeach touched the *Quicke.* But ſome Writers doe put this out of doubt; for they ſay, That STANLEY did expreſly promiſe to aide PERKIN, and ſent him ſome helpe of Treaſure.

Now for the *Motiue* of his falling of from the King; It is true, that at *Boſworth Field* the King was beſet, and in a manner incloſed round about by the Troupes of King RICHARD, and in manifeſt danger of his life; when this STANLEY was ſent by his Brother, with three thouſand Men to his Reſcue, which hee performed ſo, that King RICHARD was ſlaine vpon the Place. So as the condition of Mortall men is not capable of a greater benefit, then the King receiued by the hands of STANLEY; beeing like the benefit of CHRIST, at once to *Saue*, and *Crowne.* For which ſeruice the King gaue him great gifts, made him his *Councellor*, and *Chamberlaine*; and (ſomwhat contrarie to his nature) had winked at the great ſpoiles of *Boſworth Field*, which came almoſt wholly to this mans hands, to his infinite enriching. Yet neuertheleſſe blowne vp with the conceit of his *Merit*, he did not thinke he had receiued good *Meaſure* from the King, at leaſt not *Preſſing-downe*, and running-ouer, as hee expected. And his Ambition was ſo exorbitant, and vnbounded, as hee became *Sutour* to the

the King for the *Earledome* of *Cheſter*. Which euer beeing a kind of *Appennage* to the *Principalitie* of *Wales*, and vſing to goe to the Kings Sonne; his Suit did not onely end in a *Deniall*, but in a *Diſtaſte*. The King perceiuing thereby, that his *Deſires* were intemperate, and his *Cogitations* vaſte, and irregular, and that his former *Benefits* were but cheape, and lightly regarded by him. Wherefore the King began not to brooke him well. And as a little *Leauen* of new Diſtaſte doth commonly ſowre the whole *Lumpe* of former Merites, the Kings *Wit* began now to ſuggeſt vnto his *Paſſion*, that STANLEY, at *Boſworth Field*, though hee came time enough to ſaue his life, yet hee ſtayed long enough to endanger it. But yet hauing no matter againſt him, hee continued him in his *Places*, vntill this his *Fall*.

After him was made Lord *Chamberlaine*, GILES Lord *Dawbeny*, a man of great ſufficiencie and valour; the more, becauſe hee was gentle and moderate.

There was a common Opinion, That Sir ROBERT CLIFFORD (who now was become the *State-Informer*) was from the beginning an *Emiſſarie*, and *Spie* of the Kings; and that hee fled ouer into *Flanders* with his conſent and priuitie. But this is not probable; both becauſe hee neuer recouered that Degree of Grace, which hee had with the King before his going ouer; and chiefely, for that the *Diſcouerie* which hee had made touching the Lord *Chamberlaine* (which was his great Seruice) grew not from any thing hee learn'd abroad, for that hee knew it well before hee went.

Theſe *Executions* (and eſpecially that of the Lord *Chamberlaines*, which was the chiefe ſtrength of the *Partie*, and by meanes of Sir ROBERT CLIFFORD, who was the moſt inward man of Truſt amongſt them)

them) did extremely quaile the Deſigne of PERKIN, and his Complices, as well through Diſcouragement, as Diſtruſt. So that they were now (like *Sand* without *Lyme*) ill bound together; eſpecially as many as were *Engliſh* : who were at a gaze, looking ſtrange one vpon another, not knowing who was faithfull to their *Side*; but thinking, that the King (what with his *Baits*, and what with his *Nets*) would draw them all vnto him, that were any thing worth. And indeed it came to paſſe, that diuers came away by the *Thred*, ſometimes one, and ſometimes another. BARLEY (that was *Ioint-Commiſsioner* with CLIFFORD) did hold out one of the longeſt, till PERKIN was farre worne; yet made his Peace at the length. But, the Fall of this *Great man*, being in ſo high Authoritie and Fauour (as was thought) with the King; and the manner of Carriage of the Buſineſſe, as if there had beene ſecret Inquiſition vpon him, for a great time before; and the Cauſe for which hee ſuffered, which was little more, then for ſaying in effect, *That the Title of* YORKE *was better then the Title of* LANCASTER; which was the Caſe almoſt of euery man (at the leaſt in Opinion;) was matter of great Terrour amongſt all the Kings Seruants and Subiects : Inſomuch, as no man almoſt thought himſelfe ſecure; and men durſt ſcarce commune or talke one with another: but there was a generall Diffidence euery where. Which neuertheleſſe made the King rather more *Abſolute*, then more *Safe*. For, *Bleeding Inwards and ſhut Vapours ſtrangle ſooneſt, and oppreſſe moſt.*

Hereupon preſently came forth *Swarmes* and *Volies* of *Libels* (which are the *Guſts* of Libertie of Speach reſtrayned, and the *Females* of Sedition) containing bitter *Inuectiues*, and Slanders againſt the King, and ſome of the *Councell*. For the contriuing and diſperſing whereof (after great Diligence of Inquirie)

fiue meane Perſons were caught vp, and executed.

Meane while, the King did not neglect *Ireland*; being the *Soyle* where theſe *Muſhromes* and *Vpſtart-Weedes* (that ſpring vp in a Night) did chiefely proſper. Hee ſent therefore from hence (for the better ſettling of his Affaires there) *Commiſsioners* of both *Robes*: The *Prior* of *Lanthony*, to bee his *Chancellor* in that *Kingdome*; and Sir EDVVARD POYNINGS, with a Power of Men, and a *Marſhall Commiſsion*, together with a Ciuill Power of his *Lieutenant*, with a Clauſe, That the *Earle* of *Kildare*, then *Deputie*, ſhould obey him. But, the *Wild-Iriſh* (who were the principall Offenders) fled into the *Woods* and *Bogges*, after their manner: and thoſe, that knew themſelues guiltie, in the *Pale*, fled to them. So that Sir EDVVARD POYNINGS was inforced to make a *Wild-Chaſe* vpon the *Wild-Iriſh*: Where (in reſpect of the Mountaines and *Faſtneſſes*) hee did little good. Which (eyther out of a ſuſpicious Melancholie vpon his bad *Succeſſe*, or the better to ſaue his Seruice from *Diſgrace*) hee would needes impute vnto the *Comfort*, that the *Rebels* ſhould receiue vnder-hand from the *Earle* of *Kildare*; euery light ſuſpicion growing vpon the *Earle*, in reſpect of the KILDARE that was in the Action of LAMBERT SIMNELL, and ſlaine at *Stoke-field*. Wherefore hee cauſed the *Earle* to bee apprehended, and ſent into *England*; where, vpon Examination, hee cleared himſelfe ſo well, as hee was re-placed in his *Gouernment*. But, POYNINGS (the better to make compenſation of the Meagerneſſe of his Seruice in the *Warres*, by *Acts* of *Peace*) called a *Parliament*; where was made that memorable *Act*, which at this day is called POYNINGS *Lawe*, whereby all the *Statutes* of *England* were made to bee of force in *Ireland*. For, before they were not: neyther

are

are any now in force in *Ireland*, which were made in *England* ſince that time; which was the tenth yeare of the King.

About this time, beganne to bee diſcouered in the King that Diſpoſition, which, afterward nouriſhed and whet-on by bad *Counſellers* and Miniſters, proued the *Blot* of his times; which was, the courſe hee tooke, to cruſh *Treaſure* out of his Subiects Purſes, by forfeitures vpon *Penall-Lawes*. At this, men did ſtartle the more at this time, becauſe it appeared plainely to bee in the *King's Nature*, and not out of his *Neceſsity*, hee beeing now in *Float* for *Treaſure*; For that he had newly receiued the *Peace-money* from *France*, the *Beneuolence-money* from his Subiects, and great *Caſualties* vpon the Confiſcations of the *Lord Chamberlaine*, and diuers others. The firſt-noted *Caſe* of this kinde, was that of *Sir* WILLIAM CAPEL, Alderman of *London*: Who, vpon ſundry *Penall-Lawes*, was condemned in the ſumme of ſeuen and twenty hundred pounds, and compounded with the *King* for ſixteene hundred: And yet after, EMPSON would haue cut another *Chop* out of him, if the *King* had not died in the Inſtant.

The Summer following, the King, to comfort his *Mother* (whom he did alwaies tenderly loue and reuere*nce*) and to make ~~open~~ Demonſtration to the World, that the proceedings againſt *Sir* WILLIAM STANLEY (which was impoſed vpon him by neceſsitie of *State*) had not in any degree diminiſhed the affection he bare to THOMAS, his Brother; went in *Progreſſe* to *Latham*, to make merrie with his *Mother*, and the *Earle*, and lay there diuers dayes.

During this *Progreſſe*, PERKIN WARBECKE finding, that time and Temporizing, which (whileſt his practices were couert and wrought well in *England*) made for him; did now, when they were diſco-

uered and defeated, rather make againſt him (for that when matters once goe downe the *Hill*, they ſtay not without a new force) reſolued to trie his aduenture in ſome exploit vpon *England*; hoping ſtill vpon the affections of the Common-People towards the Houſe of YORKE. Which *Body* of Common-People hee thought was not to bee practiſed vpon, as Perſons of *Qualitie* are; But, that the onely practice vpon their affections, was To ſet vp a *Standard* in the field. The Place where hee ſhould make his Attempt, hee choſe to bee the Coaſt of *Kent*.

The King by this time was growne to ſuch an height of *Reputation* for cunning and *Policie*, that euery Accident and Euent, that went well, was laid and imputed to his foreſight, as if hee had ſet it before: As, in this Particular of PERKINS *Deſigne* vpon *Kent*. For, the world would not belieue afterwards, but the King, hauing ſecret Intelligence of PERKINS intention for *Kent* (the better to drawe it on) went of purpoſe into the *North*, a farre off, laying an open ſide vnto PERKIN, to make him come to the *Cloſe*, and ſo to trip vp his heeles, hauing made ſure in *Kent* before hand.

But ſo it was, that PERKIN had gathered together a Power of all Nations, neither in number, nor in the hardineſs and courage of the Perſons, contemptible; but, in their nature and fortunes, to bee feared as well of *Friends* as *Enemies*; being *Bankrupts*, and many of them *Felons*, and ſuch as liued by *Rapine*. Theſe hee put to Sea, and arriued vpon the Coaſt of *Sandwich*, and *Deale* in *Kent*, about *Iuly*.

There hee caſt Anchor; and to prooue the affections of the People, ſent ſome of his men to land, making great boaſt of the Power that was to follow. The *Kentiſh-men* (perceiuing that PERKIN was not followed by any *Engliſh* of name or accompt, and that his forces

forces conſiſted but of ſtrangers borne, and moſt of them baſe People, and *Free-booters*, fitter to ſpoyle a *Coaſt*, then to recouer a *Kingdome*) reſorting vnto the principall *Gentlemen* of the Countrie, profeſſed their loyaltie to the King, and deſired to bee directed and commanded for the beſt of the Kings ſeruice. The *Gentlemen*, entring into Conſultation, directed ſome forces in good number, to ſhew themſelues vpon the *Coaſt*; and ſome of them to make ſignes, to entice PERKINS *Souldiers* to land, as if they would ioyne with them: and ſome others to appeare from ſome other Places, and to make ſemblance as if they fled from them; the better to encourage them to land. But, PERKIN (who, by playing the *Prince*, or elſe taught by *Secretarie* FRION, had learned thus much, That People vnder Command, doe vſe to conſult, and after to march in order; and *Rebells* contrariwiſe runne vpon an *Head* together in confuſion) conſidering the delay of time, and obſeruing their orderly, and not tumultuary Arming, doubted the worſt. And therefore the wily *Youth* would not ſet one foot out of his Ship, till hee might ſee things were ſure. Wherefore the Kings *Forces*, perceiuing that they could draw on no more then thoſe that were formerly landed, ſet vpon them, and cut them in pieces, ere they could flie back to their Ships. In which *Skirmiſh* (beſides thoſe that fled, and were ſlaine) there were taken about an hundred and fiftie perſons. Which, for that the King thought, that to puniſh a fewe for example was *Gentlemans-Pay*, but for *Raſcall-People*, they were to bee cut off euery man, eſpecially in the beginning of an Enterprize; and likewiſe for that hee ſaw, that PERKINS Forces would now conſiſt chiefly of ſuch *Rabble* and ſcumme of deſperate People; hee therefore hanged them all, for the greater terrour. They were brought to *London*, all rayl'd in Ropes,

Ropes, like a Teame of Horſes in a Cart; and were executed ſome of them at *London*, and *Wapping*, and the reſt at diuers places vpon the Sea-Coaſt of *Kent*, *Suſſex*, and *Norfolke*, for *Sea-markes* or *Light-houſes*, to teach PERKINS People to auoid the Coaſt. The King, beeing aduertiſed of the landing of the *Rebels*, thought to leaue his *Progreſſe*: But, being certified the next day, that they were partly defeated, and partly fled, hee continued his *Progreſſe*, and ſent Sir RICHARD GVILFORD into *Kent* in meſſage. Who, calling the Countrie together, did much commend (from the King) their fidelitie, manhood, and well handling of that ſeruice; and gaue them all thanks, and (in priuate) promiſed Reward to ſome particulars.

Vpon the ſixteenth of *Nouember* (this being the eleuenth yeare of the King) was holden the *Serieants-Feaſt*, at *Elie-Place*; there beeing nine *Serieants* of that *Call*. The King, to honour the Feaſt, was preſent with his *Queene* at the Dinner; beeing a *Prince*, that was euer readie to grace and countenance the profeſſors of the *Law*; hauing a little of that, *That as hee gouerned his* Subiects *by his* Lawes, *ſo hee gouerned his* Lawes *by his* Lawyers.

This yeare alſo the King entred into League with the *Italian Potentates*, for the defenſe of *Italie*, againſt *France*. For, King CHARLES had conquered the *Realme* of *Naples*, and loſt it againe, in a kind of *Felicitie* of a Dreame. Hee paſſed the whole length of *Italie* without reſiſtance: ſo that it was true which *Pope* ALEXANDER was wont to ſay; *That the Frenchmen came into Italie, with Chalke in their hands, to marke vp their lodgings, rather then with ſwords to fight.* Hee likewiſe entred and wonne (in effect) the whole Kingdome of *Naples* it ſelfe, without ſtriking ſtroke. But, preſently thereupon, hee did commit and multiply ſo many Errours, as was too great a taske for the beſt

fortune

fortune to ouercome. Hee gaue no contentment to the *Barons* of *Naples*, of the *Faction* of the *Angeouines*; but, ſcattered his rewards according to the mercenarie appetites of ſome about him. Hee put all *Italie* vpon their *Guard*, by the ſeizing and holding of *Oſtia*, and the protecting of the Libertie of *Piſa*: which made all men ſuſpect, that his purpoſes looked further, then his title of *Naples*. Hee fell too ſoone at difference with LVDOVICO SFORTIA; who was the Man that carried the *Keyes* which brought him in, and ſhut him out. Hee neglected to extinguiſh ſome reliques of the Warre. And laſtly, in regard of his eaſie paſſage through *Italie* without reſiſtance, hee entred into an ouermuch deſpiſing of the Armes of the *Italians*: Whereby hee left the Realme of *Naples*, at his departure, ſo much the leſſe prouided. So that not long after his returne, the whole Kingdome reuolted to FERDINANDO the younger, and the *French* were quite driuen out. Neuertheleſſe, CHARLES did make both great threats, and great preparations, to re-enter *Italie* once againe. Wherefore, at the inſtance of diuers of the *States* of *Italie* (and eſpecially of *Pope* ALEXANDER) there was a League concluded, betweene the ſaid *Pope*, MAXIMILIAN King of *Romans*, HENRY King of *England*, FERDINANDO and ISABELLA, King and Queene of *Spaine* (for ſo they are conſtantly placed in the originall *Treatie* throughout) AVGVSTINO BARBADICO, *Duke* of *Venice*, and LVDOVICO SFORTIA, *Duke* of *Millan*, for the common defenſe of their eſtates. Wherein though FERDINANDO of *Naples* was not named as principall; yet (no doubt) the Kingdome of *Naples* was tacitly included, as a *Fee* of the Church.

There died alſo this yeare CECILE, *Ducheſſe* of *Yorke*, mother to King EDVVARD the Fourth, at her Caſtle of *Barkhamſted*, beeing of extreme yeares; and

and who had liued to ſee three *Princes* of her bodie crowned, and foure murthered. Shee was buried at *Foderingham*, by her husband.

This yeare alſo the King called his *Parliament*: where many Lawes were made, of a more priuate and vulgar nature, then ought to detaine the *Reader* of an *Hiſtorie*. And it may bee iuſtly ſuſpected, by the proceedings following, that as the King did excell in good Common-wealth *Lawes*; ſo neuertheleſſe hee had (in ſecret) a deſigne to make vſe of them, as well for collecting of *Treaſure*, as for correcting of *Manners*; and ſo, meaning thereby to harrow his People, did accumulate them the rather.

The principall *Law*, that was made this *Parliament*, was a Law of a ſtrange nature: rather *Iuſt*, then *Legall*; and more magnanimous, then prouident. This *Law* did ordaine, That no perſon, that did aſsiſt in Armes, or otherwiſe, the King for the time beeing, ſhould after bee empeached therefore, or attainted, either by the courſe of the Law, or by *Act* of *Parliament*: But, if any ſuch Act of *Attainder* did happen to bee made, it ſhould bee voide, and of none effect; For that it was agreeable to reaſon of *Eſtate*, that the *Subiect* ſhould not enquire of the iuſtneſſe of the Kings Title, or *Quarell*; and it was agreeable to good *Conſcience*, that (whatſoeuer the fortune of the Warre were) the *Subiect* ſhould not ſuffer for his Obedience. The ſpirit of this *Law* was wonderfull Pious and Noble: beeing like in matter of *Warre*, vnto the ſpirit of DAVID in matter of *Plague*, who ſaid, *If I haue ſinned, ſtrike mee; but what haue theſe ſheepe done?* Neither wanted this *Law* parts of prudent and deepe foreſight. For, it did the better take away occaſion, for the people to buſie themſelues, to prie into the Kings Title; for that howſoeuer it fell, their ſafety was alreadie prouided for. Beſides, it could not but greatly draw

vnto

vnto him, the loue and hearts of the People, becauſe hee ſeemed more carefull for them, then for himſelfe. But yet neuertheleſſe, it did take of from his *Partie*, that great *Tie* and *Spurre* of neceſſitie, to fight and goe *Victors* out of the field; conſidering their liues and fortunes were put in ſafetie, and protected, whether they ſtood to it or ranne away. But the force and obligation of this *Law* was in it ſelfe *Illuſorie*, as to the latter part of it; by a *precedent Act* of *Parliament*, to bind or fruſtrate a *future*. For a ſupreme and abſolute *Power* cannot conclude it ſelfe, neither can that which is in nature reuocable be made fixed; no more then if a man ſhould appoint or declare by his Will, that if hee made any Latter Will, it ſhould bee voide. And for the *Caſe* of the *Act* of *Parliament*, there is a notable Preſident of it in King HENRY the Eight's time. Who doubting hee might die in the minoritie of his Sonne, procured an *Act* to paſſe, *That no Statute made during the minoritie of the King, ſhould bind him or his Succeſſorus, except it were confirmed by the King vnder his great Seale, at his full age.* But the firſt *Act* that paſſed in King EDWARD the Sixt his time, was an *Act* of Repeale of that former *Act*; at which time neuertheleſſe the King was *Minor*. But things that doe not bind, may ſatisfie for the time.

There was alſo made a ſhoaring or vnderpropping *Act* for the *Beneuolence*; to make the ſummes which any perſon had agreed to pay, and neuertheleſſe were not brought in, to bee leuiable by courſe of Law. Which *Act* did not onely bring in the *Areres* but did indeed countenance the whole buſineſſe, and was pretended to bee made at the deſire of thoſe, that had beene forward to pay.

This *Parliament* alſo was made that good *Law*, which gaue the *Attaint* vpon a *falſe Verdict* betweene *Partie* and *Partie*, which before was a kind of *Euan-*

gile, irremediable. It extends not to cauſes *Capitall*, as well becauſe they are for the moſt part at the Kings Suite; as becauſe in them (if they bee followed in Courſe of *Indictment*) there paſſeth a double *Iurie*, the *Indictors*, and the *Tryors*; and ſo not Twelue Men, but Foure and twentie. But it ſeemeth that was not the onely reaſon; for this reaſon holdeth not in the *Appeale*. But the great reaſon was, leaſt it ſhould tend to the diſcouragement of *Iurors* in Caſes of *Life* and *Death*; if they ſhould bee ſubiect to Suit and Penaltie, where the fauour of *Life* maketh againſt them. It extendeth not alſo to any Suite, where the *Demand* is vnder the value of fortie pounds; for that in ſuch Caſes of pettie value, it would not quite the Charge, to goe about againe.

There was another *Law* made againſt a branch of *Ingratitude* in Women, who hauing beene aduanced by their *Husbands*, or their Husbands *Anceſtors*, ſhould alien, and thereby ſeeke to defeate the *Heyres*, or thoſe in *Remainder*, of the Lands, whereunto they had beene ſo aduanced. The remedie was, by giuing power to the next, to enter for a forfeiture

There was alſo enacted that Charitable *Law*, for the admiſſion of poore Suiters *In Forma Pauperis*, without Fee to *Councellor*, *Atturney*, or *Clerke*, whereby poore men became rather able to *vexe*, then vnable to *ſue*. There were diuers other good *Laws* made that *Parliament*, as we ſaid before: but we ſtill obſerue our manner, in ſelecting out thoſe, that are not of a *Vulgar* nature.

The King this while, though he ſate in *Parliament*, as in full Peace, and ſeemed to account of the deſignes of PERKIN (who was now returned into *Flanders*) but as a *May-game*; yet hauing the compoſition of a wiſe King (*Stout* without, and *apprehenſiue* within) had giuen order for the watching of *Beacons* vpon the Coaſts,

Coaſts, and erecting more where they ſtood too thin, and had a carefull eye where this wandering *Cloud* would breake. But PERKIN aduiſed to keepe his fire (which hitherto burned as it were vpon greene Wood) aliue, with continuall blowing; Sailed againe into *Ireland*, whence he had formerly departed, rather vpon the hopes of *France*, then vpon any vnreadineſſe or diſcouragement hee found in that people. But in the ſpace of time betweene the Kings *Diligence* and POYNINGS *Commiſsion*, had ſo ſetled things there, as there was nothing left for PERKIN, but the bluſtring affection of wilde and naked people. Wherefore he was aduiſed by his *Councell*, to ſeeke aide of the King of *Scotland*; a *Prince* yong, and Valourous, and in good termes with his *Nobles* and *People*, and ill affected to King HENRY. At this time alſo both MAXIMILIAN and CHARLES of *France* began to beare no good will to the King. The One beeing diſpleaſed with the Kings *Prohibition* of Commerce with *Flanders*: The Other holding the King for ſuſpect, in regard of his late entrie into league with the *Italians*. Wherefore beſides the open *Aides* of the *Ducheſſe* of *Burgundy*, which did with *Sayles* and *Oares* put on and aduance PERKINS deſignes, there wanted not ſome ſecret *Tides* from MAXIMILIAN and CHARLES, which did further his fortunes. In ſo much as they, both by their ſecret Letters, and Meſſages, recommended him to the King of *Scotland*.

PERKIN therefore comming into *Scotland* vpon thoſe hopes, with a well appointed companie, was by the King of *Scots* (beeing formerly well prepared) honourably welcomed, and ſoon after his arriuall admitted to his Preſence, in a ſolemne manner. For the King receiued him in *State* in his Chamber of *Preſence*, accompanied with diuers of his *Nobles*. And PERKIN well attended, as well with thoſe that the King

had ſent before him, as with his owne *Traine*, entered the roome wher the King was, and comming neare to the King, and bowing a little to imbrace him, hee retired ſome paces backe, and with a loud voice (that all that were preſent might heare him) made his *Declaration* in this manner.

HIgh and Mightie King, your Grace, and theſe your Nobles here preſent, may be pleaſed benignely to bow your Eares, to heare the Tragedie *of a young Man, that by Right ought to hold in his hand the* Ball *of a* Kingdome, *but by Fortune is made Himſelfe a* Ball, *toſſed from Miſerie to Miſerie, and from Place to Place. You ſee here before you the Spectacle of a* PLANTAGENET, *who hath beene carried from the* Nurſerie *to the* Sanctuarie; *from the* Sanctuarie, *to the direfull* Priſon; *from the* Priſon, *to the Hand of the cruell* Tormentor; *and from that Hand, to the wide* Wilderneſſe (*as I may truly call it*) *for ſo the World hath beene to mee. So that hee that is borne to a great* Kingdome, *hath not Ground to ſet his foote vpon, more then this where hee now ſtandeth, by your Princely Fauour.* EDWARD *the Fourth, late King of* England, (*as your Grace cannot but haue heard*) *left two Sonnes;* EDWARD, *and* RICHARD, Duke *of* Yorke, *both verie young.*

young. EDWARD, *the eldeſt, ſucceeded their* Father *in the* Crowne, *by the name of* King EDWARD *the Fift. But* RICHARD, Duke *of* Gloceſter, *their vnnaturall Vnckle, firſt thirſting after the* Kingdome, *through* Ambition, *and afterwards thirſting for their* Bloud, *out of deſire to ſecure himſelfe, imployed an* Inſtrument *of his (confident to him, as hee thought) to murther them both. But this Man that was implyed, to execute that execrable* Tragedie, *hauing cruelly ſlaine King* EDWARD, *the eldeſt of the two, was moued partly by Remorſe, and partly by ſome other meane, to ſaue* RICHARD *his Brother, making a* Report *neuertheleſſe to the* Tyrant, *that hee had performed his* Commandement *for both Brethren. This* Report *was accordingly belieued, and publiſhed generally. So that the World hath beene poſſeſſed of an Opinion, that they both were barbarouſly made away, though euer* Truth *hath ſome ſparkes that flye abroad, vntill it appeare in due time, as this hath had. But Almightie* GOD, *that ſtopped the Mouth of the* Lion, *and ſaued little* IOAS *from the* Tyrannie *of* ATHALIAH, *when ſhee maſſacred the Kings Children; and did ſaue* ISAACK, *when the Hand was ſtretched forth to ſacrifice him; preſerued the*

ſecond

ſecond Brother. For I my ſelfe, that ſtand heere in your preſence, am that very RICHARD, Duke of Yorke, Brother of that infortunate Prince, King EDWARD the Fift, now the moſt rightfull ſuruiuing Heire-Male to that Victorious and moſt Noble EDWARD, of that Name the Fourth, late King of England. For the manner of my Eſcape, it is fit it ſhould paſſe in ſilence, or (at leaſt) in a more ſecret Relation; for that it may concerne ſome aliue, and the memorie of ſome that are dead. Let it ſuffice to thinke, that I had then a Mother liuing, a Queene, and one that expected dayly ſuch a Commandement from the Tyrant, for the murthering of her Children. Thus in my tender age eſcaping by GODS Mercie out of London, I was ſecretly conueyed ouer Sea. Where, after a time, the Party that had mee in Charge, (vpon what new Feares, change of Minde, or Practice, GOD knoweth) ſuddenly forſooke me. Whereby I was forced to wander abroad, and to ſeeke meane Conditions for the ſuſtaining of my Life. Wherefore diſtracted betweene ſeuerall Paſsions, the one of Feare to bee knowne, leſt the Tyrant ſhould haue a new Attempt vpon mee, the other of Griefe and Diſdaine to bee vnknowne, and to liue in that

baſe

baſe and ſeruile manner that I did; I reſolued with my ſelfe, to expect the Tyrants *Death, and then to put my ſelfe into my* Siſters *hands, who was next* Heire *to the* Crowne. *But in this Seaſon, it happened one* HENRY TIDDER, *ſonne to* EDMOND TIDDER Earle *of* Richmond, *to come from* France, *and enter into the* Realme, *and by ſubtile and foule meanes to obtaine the* Crowne *of the ſame, which to mee rightfully appertained. So that it was but a* Change, *from* Tyrant *to* Tyrant. *This* HENRY, *my extreme and mortall* Enemie, *ſo ſoone as hee had knowledge of my beeing aliue, imagined and wrought all the ſubtill wayes and meanes hee could, to procure my finall Deſtruction. For my mortall* Enemie *hath not onely falſely ſurmiſed mee to bee a fayned* Perſon, *giuing mee* Nick-names, *ſo abuſing the World; But alſo, to deferre and put mee from entrie into* England, *hath offered large Summes of* Money, *to corrupt the* Princes *and their* Miniſters, *with whom I haue beene retayned; and made importune* Labours *to certaine* Seruants *about my* Perſon, *to murther or poyſon mee, and others to forſake and leaue my Righteous* Quarrell, *and to depart from my* Seruice, *as Sir* ROBERT CLIFFORD, *and others. So that euerie*

Man

Man of Reaſon *may well perceiue, that* HENRIE, *calling himſelfe King of* England, *needed not to haue beſtowed ſuch great Summes of* Treaſure, *nor ſo to haue buſied himſelfe with importune and inceſſant* Labour *and* Induſtry, *to compaſſe my* Death *and* Ruine, *if I had beene ſuch a fained* Perſon. *But the truth of my Cauſe beeing ſo manifeſt, moued the moſt* Chriſtian King CHARLES, *and the Ladie Ducheſſe* Dowager *of* Burgundie, *my moſt Deare* Aunt, *not onely to acknowledge the truth thereof, but louingly to aſſiſt mee. But it ſeemeth that* GOD *abone (for the good of this whole* Iſland, *and the Knitting of theſe two* Kingdomes *of* England *and* Scotland *in a ſtrait* Concord *aud* Amitie, *by ſo great an Obligation) hath reſerued the placing of mee in the* Imperiall Throne *of* England, *for the* Armes *and* Succours *of your* Grace. *Neither is it the firſt time that a* King *of* Scotland *hath ſupported them, that were bereft and ſpoyled of the* Kingdome *of* England; *as of late (in freſh memorie) it was done in the Perſon of* HENRY *the Sixth. Wherefore, for that your* Grace *hath giuen cleare Signes, that you are in no* Noble *qualitie inferiour to your* Royall Auncеſtors; *I ſo diſtreſſed a* Prince, *was hereby mooued to come and put my Selfe into your* Royall

Royall *Hands, deſiring your Aſſiſtance to recouer my* Kingdome *of* England; *promiſing faithfully to beare my* Selfe *towards your* Grace *no otherwiſe, then if I were your owne Naturall* Brother, *and will vpon the Recouerie of mine* Inheritance, *gratefully doe you all the* Pleaſure *that is in my vtmoſt* Power.

AFter PERKIN had told his Tale, King IAMES anſwered brauely and wiſely; *That whatſoeuer hee were, hee ſhould not repent him, of putting himſelfe into his hands.* And from that time forth, though there wanted not ſome about him, that would haue perſwaded him, that all was but an *Illuſion*; yet notwithſtanding, either taken by PERKINS amiable and alluring behauiour, or inclining to the recommendation of the great *Princes* abroad, or willing to take an occaſion of a Warre againſt King HENRY, hee entertained him in all things, as became the perſon of RICHARD *Duke* of *Yorke*; embraced his Quarrell, and (the more to put it out of doubt, that hee tooke him to bee a great *Prince*, and not a *Repreſentation* only) hee gaue conſent, that this *Duke* ſhould take to wife the *Ladie* KATHERINE GORDON, daughter to the *Earle Huntley*, beeing a neare Kinſwoman to the King himſelfe, and a young *Virgin* of excellent beautie and vertue.

Not long after, the King of *Scots* in perſon, with PERKIN in his companie, entred with a great Armie (though it conſiſted chiefly of *Borderers*, beeing rayſed ſomewhat ſodainly) into *Northumberland*. And PERKIN, for a *Perfume* before him as hee went,

cauſed to bee publiſhed a *Proclamation* of this tenor following, in the name of RICHARD *Duke* of *Yorke*, true Inheritour of the Crowne of *England*.

The Originall of this *Proclamation* remaineth with Sir *Robert Cotton*, a worthy Preſeruer and Treaſurer of rare Antiquities: from whoſe *Manuſcripts* I haue had much light for the furniſhing of this Work.

IT hath pleaſed GOD, *Who putteth downe the* Mightie *from their* Seat, *and exalteth the* Humble, *and ſuffereth not the Hopes of the* Iuſt *to periſh in the end, to giue Vs meanes at the length, to ſhew Our Selues armed vnto Our Leiges and People of* England. *But far bee it from Vs, to intend their hurt or damage, or to make Warre vpon them, otherwiſe then to deliuer* Our Selfe *and them from* Tyrannie *and* Oppreſsion. *For our mortall Enemie* HENRY TIDDER, *a falſe* Vſurper *of the* Crowne *of* England, (*which to Vs by* Naturall *and* Lineall Right *appertaineth*) *knowing in his owne Heart Our vndoubted Right, (Wee beeing the very* RICHARD, Duke *of* Yorke, *younger* Sonne, *and now ſuruiuing* Heire-male *of the Noble and Victorious* EDWARD *the Fourth, late King of* England) *hath not onely depriued Vs of Our* Kingdome, *but likewiſe by all fowle and wicked meanes, ſought to betray Vs, and bereaue Vs of Our* Life. *Yet if his* Tyrannie *onely extended it ſelfe to Our* Perſon (*although Our* Royall Bloud *teacheth Vs to bee ſenſible of* Iniuries) *it ſhould bee leſſe to Our griefe. But this*

TID-

TIDDER, *who boasteth himselfe to haue ouerthrowne a* Tyrant, *hath euer since his first entrance into his* Vsurped Raigne, *put little in practise, but* Tirannie *and the feats thereof.*

For King RICHARD, *our Vnnaturall Vncle, although desire of* Rule *did blind him, yet in his other actions (like a true* PLANTAGENET) *was* Noble, *and loued the* Honour *of the* Realme, *and the Contentment and Comfort of his Nobles and People. But this our* Mortall Enemy (*agreeable to the meanesse of his Birth*) *hath troden vnder foot the* honour *of this* Nation; *selling our best* Confederates *for Monie, and making Marchandize of the* Bloud, Estates, *and* Fortunes *of our* Peeres *and* Subiects, *by fained* Warres, *and dishonourable* Peace, *onely to enrich his Coffers. Nor vnlike hath beene his hatefull Mis-gouernement, and euill Deportments at home. First, hee hath (to fortifie his false Quarrell) caused diuers* Nobles *of this our* Realme (*whom hee held Suspect, and stood in dread of*) *to bee cruelly murthered; as our Cosin Sir* WILLIAM STANLEY Lord Chamberlaine, *Sir* SIMON MOVNTFORT, *Sir* ROBERT RATCLIFFE, WILLIAM DAWBENY HVMPHREY STAFFORD *and many others, besides such as haue dearely bought their liues with intollerable* Ransomes.

Some of which Nobles are now in the Sanctuarie. Alſo hee hath long kept, and yet keepeth in Priſon, our right entirely welbeloued Coſen, EDWARD, Sonne and Heire to our Vnckle Duke of Clarence, and others; withholding from them their rightfull Inheritance, to the intent they ſhould neuer bee of might and power, to aid and aſſiſt vs at our neede, after the dutie, of their Leigeances. Hee alſo married by Compulſion certaine of our Siſters, and alſo the Siſter of our ſaid Coſen the Earle of Warwicke, and diuers other Ladies of the Royall Bloud, vnto certaine of his Kinſmen and Friends of ſimple and lowe Degree; and putting apart all Well-diſpoſed Nobles, hee hath none in fauour and truſt about his Perſon, but Biſhop FOX, SMITH, BRAY, LOVEL, OLIVER KING, DAVID OWEN, RISELEY, TVRBERVILE, TILER, CHOLMLEY; EMPSON, IAMES HOBART, IOHN CVT, GARTH, HENRY WYAT, and ſuch other Caitifes and Villaines of Birth, which by ſubtile inventions and Pilling of the People, haue beene the principall Finders, Occaſioners, and Councellors of the Miſ-rule and Miſchiefe now raigning in England.

Wee remembring theſe Premiſſes, with the great and execrable Offences daily committed, and done by our foreſaid great Enemie, and his Adhe-

Adherents, *in breaking the* Liberties *and* Franchiſes *of our* Mother *the* Holy Church, *vpon pretences of Wicked and Heatheniſh* Policie, *to the high diſpleaſure of Almighty* GOD, *beſides the manifold* Treaſons, *abominable* Murthers, Man-ſlaughters, Robberies, Extortions, *the dayly Pilling of the People, by* Diſmes, Taxes, Tallages, Beneuolences, *and other vnlawfull* Impoſitions, *and grieuous* Exactions, *with many other hainous* Effects, *to the likely deſtruction and deſolation of the whole* Realme: *ſhall by* GODS *Grace, and the helpe and aſſiſtance of the great* Lords *of our* Bloud, *with the Councell of other ſad* Perſons, *ſee that the Commodities of our* Realme *bee imployed to the moſt aduantage of the ſame; the entercourſe of* Marchandiſe *betwixt* Realme *&* Realme, *to bee miniſtred and handled, as ſhall more bee to the* Commonweale, *& proſperity of our* Subiects; *and all ſuch* Diſmes, Taxes, Tallages, Beneuolences, *vnlawfull* Impoſitions, *and grieuous* Exactions, *as be aboue rehearſed, to be fore-done and layd apart, and neuer from henceforth to bee called vpon, but in ſuch caſes as our* noble Progenitors *Kings of* England, *haue of old time been accuſtomed to haue the Aid, Succor, and helpe of their Subiects and true Liege-men.*

And further, wee doe out of our Grace *and* Cle-

Clemencie, *hereby as well publiſh and promiſe to all our* Subiects *Remiſsion and free Pardon of all By-paſt* Offences *whatſoeuer, againſt our* Perſon, *or* Eſtate, *in adhering to our ſaid* Enemie, *by whom (wee know well) they haue beene miſ-led, if they ſhall within time conuenient ſubmit themſelues vnto vs. And for ſuch as ſhall come with the foremoſt, to aſsiſt our Righteous* Quarrell, *wee ſhall make them ſo farre partakers of our Princely* Fauour *and* Bountie, *as ſhal be highly for the Comfort of them and theirs, both during their Life, and after their Death. As alſo wee ſhall by all meanes, which* GOD *ſhall put into our hands, demeane our ſelues to giue Royal contentment to al* Degrees *and* Eſtates *of our People, maintaining the* Liberties *of* Holy Church *in their* Entire, *preſeruing the* Honours, Priuiledges, *and* Prehemineces *of our* Nobles, *from* Contempt *or* diſparagement, *according to the* Dignitie *of their* Bloud. *Wee ſhall alſo vnyoke our People from all heauie* Burthens, *and* Endurances, *and confirme our* Cities, Boroughes, *and* Townes, *in their* Charters *and* Freedomes, *with Inlargement, where it ſhall be deſerued; and in all points giue our Subiects cauſe to thinke, that the bleſſed and debonaire* Gouernment *of our Noble* Father *King* EDWARD *(in his laſt times) is in vs reuiued.*

And

And for as much as the putting to death, or taking aliue of our ſaid Mortall Enemie, *may bee a meane to ſtay much effuſion of* Bloud, *which otherwiſe may enſue, if by* Compulſion *or faire* Promiſes, *hee ſhall draw after him any number of our* Subiects *to reſiſt vs, which wee deſire to auoid (though wee bee certainely informed, that our ſaid* Enemie *is purpoſed and prepared to flye the* Land, *hauing alreadie made ouer great Maſſes of the* Treaſure *of our* Crowne, *the better to ſupport him in* Forraine Parts) *Wee doe hereby declare, That whoſoeuer ſhall take or diſtreſſe our ſaid* Enemie (*though the* Party *bee of neuer ſo meane a* Condition) *hee ſhall bee by vs rewarded with a Thouſand Pound in* Money, *forthwith to bee laid downe to him, and an Hundred Markes by the yeare of* Inheritance, *beſides that hee may otherwiſe merit, both toward* GOD *and all good People, for the deſtruction of ſuch a* Tyrant.

Laſtly, wee doe all men to wit, and herein wee take alſo GOD *to witneſſe, That whereas* GOD *hath mooued the Heart of our Deareſt* Couſin, *the King of* Scotland, *to aide vs in Perſon, in this our righteous* Quarrell; *it is altogether without any Pact or Promiſe, or ſo much as demaund of any thing, that may preiudice our* Crowne *or* Subiects: *But contrariwiſe,*

wiſe, with promiſe on our ſaid Couſins *part, that whenſoeuer hee ſhall find vs in ſufficient ſtrength to get the vpper hand of our* Enemie (*which wee hope will be very ſodainly*) *hee will forthwith peaceably returne into his owne* Kingdome; *contenting himſelfe onely with the glorie of ſo Honourable an* Enterpriſe, *and our true and faithfull Loue and Amitie. Which wee ſhall euer* (*by the Grace of* Almightie GOD) *ſo order, as ſhall be to the great comfort of both* Kingdomes.

BVt PERKINS *Proclamation* did little edifie with the people of *England*; neither was hee the better welcome for the companie hee came in. Wherefore the King of *Scotland* ſeeing none came in to PERKIN, nor none ſtirred any where in his fauour, turned his enterpriſe into a *Rode*; and waſted and deſtroyed the Countrie of *Northumberland*, with fire and ſword. But hearing that there were Forces comming againſt him, and not willing that they ſhould find his Men heauie and laden with bootie, hee returned into *Scotland* with great Spoyles, deferring further proſecution, till another time. It is ſaid, that PERKIN acting the part of a *Prince* handſomely, when hee ſaw the *Scottiſh* fell to waſte the Countrie, came to the King in a paſſionate manner, making great lamentation, and deſired, That that might not bee the manner of making the Warre; for that no *Crowne* was ſo deare to his mind, as that hee deſired to purchaſe it with the bloud and ruine of his *Countrie*. Whereunto the King anſwered halfe in ſport; that hee doubted much, hee was carefull for that that was none of his, and

that

that hee ſhould bee too good a *Steward* for his Enemie, to ſaue the Countrie to his vſe.

By this time, beeing the Eleuenth yeare of the King, the Interruption of Trade betweene the *Engliſh* and the *Flemiſh*, began to pinch the *Merchants* of both Nations very ſore. Which mooued them, by all meanes they could deuiſe, to affect and diſpoſe their *Soueraignes* reſpectiuely, to open the *Entercourſe* againe. Wherein, time fauoured them. For the *Arch-Duke* and his *Councell* beganne to ſee, that PERKIN would prooue but a *Runnagate*, and *Citizen of the World*; and that it was the part of children, to fall out about *Babies*. And the King on his part, after the Attempts vpon *Kent* and *Northumberland*, beganne to haue the buſineſſe of PERKIN in leſſe eſtimation; ſo as hee did not put it to accompt, in any Conſultation of *State*. But that that mooued him moſt, was, that beeing a King that loued Wealth and Treaſure, hee could not endure to haue *Trade* ſicke, nor any Obſtruction to continue in the *Gate-vaine*, which diſperſeth that bloud. And yet he kept State ſo farre, as firſt to bee ſought vnto. Wherein the *Merchant-Aduenturers* likewiſe, (being a ſtrong Companie at that time, and well vnderſet with rich Men, and good order) did hold out brauely; taking off the Commodities of the *Kingdome*, though they lay dead vpon their hands for want of *Vent*. At the laſt, *Commiſſioners* met at *London*, to Treate. On the Kings part; Biſhop FOXE Lord *Priuie Seale*, *Viſcount Wells*, KENDAL Prior of Saint IOHNS, WARHAM Maſter of the *Rolles*, who beganne to gaine much vpon the Kings opinion; VRSVVICK, who was almoſt euer one; and RISELY. On the *Arch-Dukes* part, the Lord BEVERS, his *Admirall*, the Lord VERVNSEL *Preſident* of *Flanders*, and others. Theſe concluded a perfect Treatie, both of *Amitie* and *Inter-*

courſe, betweene the *King* and the *Arch-Duke*; Contayning Articles both of *State*, *Commerce*, and *Free-Fiſhing*. This is that *Treatie*, which the *Flemmings* call at this day, *Intercurſus Magnus*; both becauſe it is more compleat, then the precedent Treaties, of the Third and Fourth yeare of the King: and chiefly to giue it a difference, from the *Treatie* that followed in the One and twentieth yeare of the King, which they call *Intercurſus Malus*. In this *Treatie*, there was an expreſſe Article againſt the *Reception* of the *Rebels* of either *Prince* by other; purporting, that if any ſuch *Rebell* ſhould bee required by the *Prince* whoſe *Rebell* hee was, of the *Prince Confederate*, that forthwith the *Prince Confederate* ſhould by *Proclamation* command him to auoid the Countrie. Which if hee did not within fifteen dayes, the *Rebell* was to ſtand proſcribed, and put out of *Protection*. But neuertheleſſe in this Article, PERKIN was not named, neither perhaps contayned, becauſe hee was no *Rebell*. But by this meanes his wings were clipt of his Followers, that were *Engliſh*. And it was expreſly compriſed in the *Treatie*, that it ſhould extend to the *Territories* of the *Ducheſſe Dowager*. After the *Intercourſe* thus reſtored The *Engliſh Merchants* came againe to their *Manſion* at *Antwerpe*, where they were receiued with *Proceſsion* and great Ioy.

The Winter following, beeing the Twelfth yeare of his raigne, The King called againe his *Parliament*: where hee did much exaggerate both the *Malice*, and the cruell *Predatorie Warre* lately made by the King of *Scotland*; That that King, beeing in Amitie with him, and no wayes prouoked, ſhould ſo burne in hatred towards him, as to drinke of the *Lees* and *Dreggs* of PERKINS *Intoxication*, who was euery where elſe detected and diſcarded: And that when hee perceiued it was out of his reach, to doe the King any hurt, hee

hee had turned his Armes vpon vnarmed and vnprouided *People*, to ſpoyle only and depopulate, contrarie to the *Lawes* both of *Warre* and *Peace*: Concluding, that hee could neither with Honour, nor with the ſafety of his People, to whom hee did owe Protection, let paſſe theſe wrongs vnreuenged. The *Parliament* vnderſtood him well, and gaue him a *Subſidie*, limited to the ſumme of one hundred and twentie thouſand Pounds, beſides two *Fifteenes*. For his *Warres* were alwaies to him as a *Mine* of *Treaſure*, of a ſtrange kind of *Ore*; *Iron* at the top, and *Gold* and *Siluer* at the bottome. At this *Parliament* (for that there had beene ſo much time ſpent in making *Lawes* the yeare before, and for that it was called purpoſely in reſpect of the *Scottiſh Warre*) there were no *Lawes* made to bee remembred. Only there paſſed a *Law*, at the Sute of the *Merchant-Aduenturers* of *England*, againſt the *Merchant-Aduenturers* of *London*, for *Monopolizing* and exacting vpon the Trade. which it ſeemeth they did, a little to ſaue themſelues, after the hard time they had ſuſtained by want of Trade. But thoſe *Innouations* were taken away by *Parliament*.

But it was fatall to the King, to fight for his money. And though hee auoided to fight with *Enemies* abroad, yet hee was ſtill inforced to fight for it with *Rebels* at home. For no ſooner beganne the *Subſidie* to bee leuied in *Corn-wall*, but the People there began to grudge and murmur. The *Corniſh* beeing a Race of Men, ſtout of ſtomach, mightie of Bodie and Limme, and that liued hardly in a barren Countrie, and many of them could (for a need) liue vnder ground, that were *Tinners*; they muttered extreamely, that it was a thing not to bee ſuffered, that for a little ſtirre of the *Scots*, ſoone blowne ouer, they ſhould bee thus grinded to Powder with *Payments*: And ſaid it was for them to pay, that had too much, and liued idly. But

they would eat their bread, that they got with the ſweat of their browes, and no man ſhould take it from them. And as in the *Tides* of *People* once vp, there want not commonly ſtirring *Windes* to make them more rough: So this *People* did light vpon two *Ring-leaders*, or Captaines of the *Rout*. The one was one MICHAEL IOSEPH, a *Black-ſmith* or *Farrier* of *Bodmin*; a notable talking Fellow, and no leſſe deſirous to bee talked of. The other was THOMAS FLAMMOCK, a *Lawyer*; who by telling his neighbours commonly vpon any occaſion, that the *Law* was on their ſide, had gotten great ſway amongſt them. This Man talked learnedly, and as if hee could tel how to make a *Rebellion*, and neuer breake the *Peace*. Hee tould the *People*, that *Subſidies* were not to bee granted nor leuied in this caſe; that is, for *Warres* of *Scotland* (for that the *Law* had prouided another courſe, by ſeruice of *Eſcuage*, for thoſe Iourneyes) much leſſe when all was quiet, and Warre was made but a *Pretenſe* to poll and pill the *People*: And therefore that it was good, they ſhould not ſtand now like Sheepe before the Shearers, but put on Harneſſe, and take Weapons in their hands: Yet to doo no creature hurt; but goe and deliuer the King a *Strong Petition*, for the laying downe of thoſe grieuous *Paiments*, and for the puniſhment of thoſe that had giuen him that Counſell; to make others beware how they did the like in time to come: And ſaid, for his part hee did not ſee how they could doo the duty of true *Engliſh-men*, and good *Liege-men*, except they did deliuer the King from ſuch wicked Ones that would deſtroy both Him and the Countrey. Their ayme was at *Arch-Biſhoppe* MORTON, and Sir REGINOLD BRAY, who were the Kings *Skreens* in this Enuy.

After that theſe two, FLAMMOCKE and the *Blacke-ſmith*, had, by ioynt and ſeuerall *Pratings*, found tokens

tokens of conſent in the *Multitude*, they offered themſelues to lead them, vntill they ſhould heare of better men to bee their *Leaders*; which they ſaid would be ere long: Telling them further, that they would bee but their ſeruants, and firſt in euery danger; but doubted not but to make both the *Weſt-end* and the *Eaſt-end* of *England* to meet in ſo good a *Quarell*; and that all (rightly vnderſtood) was but for the Kings ſeruice. The *People*, vpon theſe ſeditious *Inſtigations*, did arme (moſt of them with *Bowes*, and *Arrowes*, and *Bills*, and ſuch other Weapons of rude and Countrey People) and forthwith vnder the *Command* of their *Leaders* (which in ſuch caſes is euer at pleaſure) marched out of *Cornewall*, through *Deuonſhire*, vnto *Taunton* in *Somerſetſhire*, without any ſlaughter, violence, or ſpoyle of the Countrey. At *Taunton* they killed, in furie, an officious and eager *Commiſsioner* for the *Subſidie*, whom they called The *Prouoſt* of *Perin*. Thence they marched to *Wells*: where the *Lord* AVDLEY (with whom their *Leaders* had, before, ſome ſecret *Intelligence*) a Noble-man of an antient *Familie*, but vnquiet and popular, and aſpiring to Ruine, came-in to them, and was by them (with great Gladneſſe and cries of Ioy) accepted as their *Generall*; they beeing now proud, that they were led by a *Noble-man*. The *Lord* AVDLEY led them on from *Wells* to *Salisbury*, and from *Salisburie* to *Winchester*. Thence the fooliſh people, who (in effect) led their *Leaders*, had a minde to bee led into *Kent*; fanſying, that the People there would ioyne with them, contrarie to all reaſon or iudgement; conſidering, the *Kentiſh-men* had ſhewed great *Loyaltie* and Affection to the King ſo lately before. But the rude People had heard FLAMMOCK ſay, that Kent *was neuer* Conquered, *and that they were the freeſt People of* England. And, vpon theſe vaine Noiſes, they looked for great matters at their hands, in

in a cauſe which they conceited to bee for the libertie of the *Subiect*. But when they were come into *Kent*, the Country was ſo well ſettled, both by the Kings late kinde vſage towards them, and by the credit and power of the *Earle* of *Kent*, the *Lord* ABERGAVENNIE, and the *Lord* COBHAM, as neither *Gentleman* nor *Yeoman* came-in to their aide; which did much dampe and diſmay many of the ſimpler ſort: In ſo much, as diuers of them did ſecretly flie from the *Armie*, and went home. But the ſturdier ſort, and thoſe that were moſt engaged, ſtood by it, and rather waxed *Proud*, then failed in *Hopes* and *Courage*. For as it did ſomewhat appall them, that the people came not in to them; ſo it did no leſſe incourage them, that the Kings *Forces* had not ſet vpon them, hauing marched from the *Weſt* vnto the *Eaſt* of *England*. Wherefore they kept on their way, and encamped vpon *Blackeheath*, betweene *Greenwich* and *Eltham*; threatning either to bid *Battaile* to the King (for now the Seas went higher then to MORTON, and BRAIE) or to take *London* within his view; imagining with themſelues, there to find no leſſe *Feare*, then *Wealth*.

But to returne to the King. When firſt hee heard of this *Commotion* of the *Corniſh-men*, occaſioned by the *Subſidie*, hee was much troubled therewith: Not for it ſelfe, but in regard of the Concurrence of other *Dangers*, that did hang ouer him at that time. For hee doubted leſt a *Warre* from *Scotland*, a *Rebellion* from *Cornewall*, and the Practices and *Conſpiracies* of PERKIN and his *Partakers*, would come vpon him at once; Knowing well, that it was a dangerous *Triplicitie* to a *Monarchie*, to haue the *Armes* of a *Forreiner*, the *Diſcontents* of *Subiects*, and the *Title* of a *Pretender*, to meete. Neuertheleſſe, the *Occaſion* tooke him in ſome part well prouided. For as ſoone as the *Parliament* had broken vp, the King had preſently rayſed a puiſſant

puiſſant *Armie*, to Warre vpon *Scotland*. And King IAMES of *Scotland* likewiſe, on his part, had made great Preparations eyther for defence, or for new aſſayling of *England*. But as for the Kings *Forces*, they were not onely in preparation, but in readineſſe preſently to ſet forth, vnder the Conduct of DAVVBENEY, the *Lord Chamberlaine*. But as ſoone as the King vnderſtood of the *Rebellion* of *Cornwall*, hee ſtayed thoſe *Forces*, retayning them for his owne ſeruice and ſafetie. But therewithall hee diſpatched the *Earle* of *Surrey* into the *North*, for the defence and ſtrength of thoſe Parts, in caſe the *Scots* ſhould ſtirre. But for the courſe hee held towards the *Rebels*, it was vtterly differing from his former cuſtome, and practice; which was euer full of forwardneſſe and celeritie, to make head againſt them, or to ſet vpon them, as ſoone as euer they were in *Action*. This hee was wont to doe. But now, beſides that hee was attempered by *Yeares*, and leſſe in loue with *Dangers*, by the continued Fruition of a *Crowne*; it was a time when the various appearance to his Thoughts of *Perils* of ſeuerall *Natures*, and from diuers *Parts*, did make him iudge it his beſt and ſureſt way, to keepe his Strength together, in the Seat and *Centre* of his *Kingdome*. According to the ancient *Indian Embleme*; in ſuch a ſwelling Seaſon, *To hould the hand vpon the middle of the Bladder, that no ſide might riſe*. Beſides, there was no neceſſitie put vpon him, to alter this Counſell. For neyther did the *Rebels* ſpoyle the *Countrey*; in which caſe it had beene diſhonour to abandon his *People*: Neyther on the other ſide, did their *Forces* gather or encreaſe, which might haſten him to precipitate and aſſayle them, before they grew too ſtrong. And laſtly, both *Reaſon of Eſtate* and *Warre* ſeemed to agree with this courſe; For that *Inſurrections* of baſe *People* are commonly more furious in

in their Beginnings. And by this meanes alſo hee had them the more at *Vantage*, being tyred and harraſſed with a long march; and more at *Mercie*, beeing cut off farre from their *Countrey*, and therefore not able by any ſodaine flight to get to *Retrait*, and to renew the *Troubles*.

When therefore the *Rebels* were encamped on *Black-Heath*, vpon the *Hill*, whence they might behold the Citie of *London*, and the faire *Valley* about it: the King knowing well, that it ſtood him vpon, by how much the more hee had hitherto protracted the time in not encountring them, by ſo much the ſooner to diſpatch with them, that it might appeare to haue beene no *Coldneſſe* in fore-ſlowing, but *Wiſedome* in chooſing his time; reſolued with all ſpeed to aſſayle them, and yet with that Prouidence, and Suretie, as ſhould leaue little to *Venture* or *Fortune*. And hauing very great and puiſſant *Forces* about him, the better to maſter all *Euents* and *Accidents*, hee diuided them into three parts. The firſt was led by the *Earle* of *Oxford* in chiefe, aſsiſted by the *Earles* of *Eſſex* and *Suffolke*. Theſe *Noblemen* were appointed, with ſome *Cornets* of *Horſe*, and *Bands* of *Foot*, and good ſtore of *Artillerie* wheeling about, to put themſelues beyond the *Hill*, where the *Rebels* were encamped; and to beſet all the Skirts and Deſcents thereof, except thoſe that lay towards *London*; thereby to haue theſe *Wilde Beaſts* (as it were) in a *Toyle*. The ſecond part of his *Forces* (which were thoſe that were to bee moſt in *Action*, and vpon which hee relyed moſt for the *Fortune* of the *Day*) hee did aſsigne to bee led by the *Lord Chamberlaine*, who was appointed to ſet vpon the *Rebels* in Front, from that ſide which is toward *London*. The third part of his *Forces* (beeing likewiſe great and braue *Forces*) hee retained about himſelfe, to bee ready, vpon all *Euents*, to reſtore the *Fight*, or con-

conſummate the *Victorie*; and meane while, to ſecure the *Citie*. And for that purpoſe hee encamped in Perſon in Saint GEORGES *Fields*, putting himſelfe betweene the *Citie*, and the *Rebels*. But the *Citie*, of *London* (eſpecially at the firſt) vpon the neare encamping of the *Rebels*, was in great Tumult: As it vſeth to bee with wealthie and populous *Cities* (eſpecially thoſe, which, for greatneſſe and fortune, are *Queenes* of their *Regions*) who ſeldome ſee out of their *Windowes*, or from their *Towres*, an *Army* of Enemies. But that which troubled them moſt, was the conceit, that they dealt with a *Rout* of *People*, with whom there was no Compoſition, or Condition, or orderly Treating, if need were; but likely to bee bent altogether vpon Rapine and Spoile. And although they had heard that the *Rebels* had behaued themſelues quietly and modeſtly, by the way as they went; yet they doubted much, That would not laſt, but rather make them more hungrie, and more in appetite, to fall vpon ſpoyle in the end. Wherefore there was great running to and fro of *People*, ſome to the *Gates*, ſome to the *Walls*, ſome to the *Water-ſide*; giuing themſelues *Alarmes*, and *Panick feares* continually. Neuertheleſſe, both TATE the *Lord Maior*, and SHAVV, and HADDON the *Sheriffs* did their parts ſtoutly and well, in arming and ordering the *People*. And the King likewiſe did adioyne ſome *Captaines* of experience in the *Warres*, to aduiſe and aſsiſt the *Citizens*. But ſoone after, when they vnderſtood that the King had ſo ordered the matter, that the *Rebels* muſt winne three *Battels*, before they could approach the *Citie*, and that hee had put his owne *Perſon* betweene the *Rebels* and them, and that the great care was rather how to impound the *Rebels*, that none of them might eſcape, then that any doubt was made to vanquiſh them; they grew to bee quiet and out of feare.

The rather, for the confidence they repoſed (which was not ſmall) in the three Leaders, OXFORD, ESSEX, and DAVVBENY; All, men famed and loued amongſt the *People*. As for IASPER *Duke* of *Bedford*, whom the King vſed to imploy with the firſt in his Warres, hee was then ſicke, and died ſoone after.

It was the two and twentieth of *Iune*, and a *Saturday* (which was the *Day* of the weeke the King fanſied) when the *Battile* was fought; though the King had, by all the Art hee could deuiſe, giuen out a falſe Day, as if hee prepared to giue the *Rebels* Battaile on the *Monday* following, the better to find them vnprouided, and in diſarray. The *Lords*, that were appointed to circle the *Hill*, had ſome dayes before planted themſelues (as at the Receipt) in places conuenient. In the afternoone towards the decline of the day (which was done, the better to keepe the *Rebels* in opinion that they ſhould not fight that day) the Lord DAVVBENEY marched on towards them, and firſt bet ſome *Troups* of them from *Detford-bridge*, where they fought manfully; But beeing in no great number were ſoone driuen back, and fled vp to their maine *Armie* vpon the *Hill*. The *Armie*, at that time hearing of the approach of the Kings *Forces*, were putting themſelues in Array, not without much Confuſion. But neither had they placed vpon the firſt high-ground towards the *Bridge*, any *Forces* to ſecond the *Troupes* below, that kept the *Bridge*; neither had they brought forwards their *Maine Battaile* (which ſtood in array farre into the *Heath*) neare to the aſcent of the *Hill*. So that the *Earle* with his *Forces* mounted the *Hill*, and recouered the *Plaine*, without reſiſtance. The Lord DAVVBENEY charged them with great furie; In ſo much, as it had like (by accident) to haue brandled the Fortune of the Day. For by inconſiderate Forwardneſſe in fighting in the head of his *Troupes*, hee

hee was taken by the *Rebels*; but, immediatly reſcued, and deliuered. The *Rebels* maintayned the Fight for a ſmall time, and for their Perſons ſhewed no want of courage: but beeing ill armed, and ill led, and without *Horſe* or *Artillerie*, they were with no great difficultie cut in peeces, and put to flight. And for their three Leaders; the Lord AVDLEY, the *Black-ſmith*, and FLAMMOCK (as, commonly the Captaines of *Commotions* are but *halfe-couraged Men*) ſuffered themſelues to bee taken aliue. The number ſlaine on the *Rebels* part, were ſome two thouſand Men; their *Armie* amounting (as it is ſaid) vnto the number of ſixteene thouſand. The reſt were (in effect) all taken; for that the *Hill* (as was ſaid) was incompaſſed with the Kings *Forces* round about. On the Kings part there died about three hundred; moſt of them ſhot with Arrowes, which were reported to bee of the length of a *Taylors yard*: So ſtrong and mightie a *Bowe* the *Corniſh-men* were ſaid to draw.

The *Victorie* thus obtayned, the King created diuers *Bannerets*, as well vpon *Black-heath*, where his *Lieutenant* had wonne the *Field* (whither hee rode in Perſon to performe the ſaid *Creation*) as in Saint GEORGES *Fields*, where his owne Perſon had beene encamped. And for matter of *Liberalitie*, hee did (by open *Edict*) giue the goods of all the *Priſoners* vnto thoſe that had taken them; either to take them in *Kind*, or compound for them, as they could. After matter of *Honour* and *Liberalitie*, followed matter of *Seueritie* and *Execution*. The Lord AVDLEY was led from *Newgate* to *Towerhill*, in a *Paper Coate* painted with his owne *Armes*; the *Armes* reuerſed, the *Coat* torne, and he at *Tower-hill* beheaded. FLAMMOCKE, and the *Black-ſmith* were hanged, drawne, and quartered at *Tiburne*; The *Black-ſmith* taking pleaſure vpon the *Hurdle* (as it ſeemeth by words

that hee vttered) to thinke that hee ſhould bee famous in after-times. The King was once in mind to haue ſent downe FLAMMOCKE, and the *Blackſmith*, to haue been executed in *Corne-wall*, for the more terrour. But, beeing aduertiſed, that the *Countrie* was yet vnquiet and boyling, hee thought better not to irritate the *People* further. All the reſt were pardoned by *Proclamation*, and to take out their *Pardons* vnder *Seale*, as many as would. So that, more then the bloud drawne in the *Field*, the King did ſatisfie himſelfe with the liues of onely three *Offenders*, for the expiation of this great *Rebellion*.

It was a ſtrange thing, to obſerue the varietie and inequalitie of the Kings *Executions* and *Pardons*. And a man would thinke it, at the firſt, a kind of *Lotterie* or Chance. But, looking into it more nearely, one ſhall find there was reaſon for it; much more perhaps, then (after ſo long a diſtance of time) wee can now diſcerne. In the *Kentiſh Commotion* (which was but an handfull of men) there were executed to the number of one hundred and fiftie; and, in this ſo mightie a *Rebellion*, but three: Whether it were, that the King put to accompt the men that were ſlaine in the *Field*; or that hee was not willing to bee ſeuere in a popular Cauſe; or that the harmeleſſe behauiour of this *People* (that came from the *Weſt* of *England*, to the *Eaſt*, without miſchiefe almoſt, or ſpoyle of the *Countrie*) did ſomewhat mollifie him, and mooue him to Compaſsion; or laſtly, that hee made a great difference betweene *People*, that did Rebell vpon *Wantonneſſe*, and them that did Rebell vpon *Want*.

After the *Corniſh-men* were defeated, there came from *Calice* to the King, an honourable *Ambaſſage* from the *French King*, which had arriued at *Calice* a Moneth before, and there was ſtayed in reſpect of the troubles; but honourably entertained and defrayed.

The

The King, at their firſt coming, ſent vnto them, and prayed them to haue patience, till a little *Smoak*, that was raiſed in his Countrie, were ouer; which would ſoone bee: Slighting (as his manner was) that openly, which neuertheleſſe hee intended ſeriouſly.

This *Ambaſſage* concerned no great Affaire; but onely the *Prolongation* of Dayes for payment of Monies, and ſome other Particulars of the *Frontiers*. And it was (indeed) but a wooing *Ambaſſage*; with good reſpects to entertaine the King in good affection: but nothing was done, or handled, to the derogation of the Kings late *Treatie* with the *Italians*.

But, during the time that the *Corniſh-men* were in their march towards *London*, the King of *Scotland* (well aduertiſed of all that paſſed, and knowing himſelfe ſure of *Warre* from *England*, whenſoeuer thoſe Stirs were appeaſed) neglected not his opportunitie; But, thinking the King had his hands full, entred the *Frontiers* of *England* againe with an *Armie*, and beſieged the *Caſtle* of *Norham* in Perſon, with part of his Forces, ſending the reſt to Forrage the *Countrie*. But FOX, *Biſhop* of *Dureſme* (a wiſe man, and one that could ſee through the *Preſent*, to the *Future*) doubting as much before, had cauſed his *Caſtle* of *Norham* to bee ſtrongly fortified, and furniſhed, with all kind of *Munition*: And had manned it likewiſe, with a very great number of tall *Souldiers*, more then for the proportion of the *Caſtle*; reckoning rather vpon a ſharpe *Aſſault*, then a long *Siege*. And for the *Countrie* likewiſe, hee had cauſed the *People* to with-draw their Cattell and Goods into *Faſt Places*, that were not of eaſie approach; and ſent in Poſt to the *Earle* of *Surrey* (who was not farre off, in *Yorkeſhire*) to come in diligence to the ſuccour. So as the *Scottiſh King* both failed of doing good vpon the *Caſtle*, and his men had but a *Catching Harueſt* of their *Spoiles*. And when

when hee vnderſtood, that the *Earle* of *Surrey* was comming on with great *Forces*, hee returned backe into *Scotland*. The *Earle* finding the *Caſtle* freed, and the Enemie retired, purſued with all celeritie into *Scotland*; hoping to haue ouer-taken the *Scottiſh* King, and to haue giuen him *Battaile*; But not attaining him in time, ſate downe before the *Caſtle* of *Aton* (one of the ſtrongeſt places, then eſteemed, betweene *Barwicke* and *Edenborough*) which in a ſmall time hee tooke. And ſoone after, the *Scottiſh* King retyring further into his Countrie, and the weather being extraordinarie foule and ſtormie, the *Earle* returned into *England*. So that the *Expeditions* on both parts were (in effect) but a *Caſtle* taken, and a *Caſtle* diſtreſſed; not anſwerable to the puiſſance of the *Forces*, nor to the heat of the *Quarrell*, nor to the greatneſſe of the *Expectation*.

Amongſt theſe *Troubles* both Ciuill and Externall, came into *England* from *Spaine* PETER HIALAS, ſome call him ELIAS (ſurely hee was the fore-runner of the good *Hap*, that wee enioy at this day. For, his *Ambaſſage* ſet the *Truce* betweene *England* and *Scotland*; the *Truce* drew on the *Peace*; the *Peace* the *Marriage*; and the *Marriage* the *Vnion* of the *Kingdomes*) a *Man* of great Wiſedome, and (as thoſe times were) not vnlearned; ſent from FERDINANDO and ISABELLA Kings of *Spaine* vnto the King, to treat a *Marriage* betweene KATHERINE their ſecond daughter, and *Prince* ARTHVR. This *Treatie* was by him ſet in a very good way, and almoſt brought to perfection. But it ſo fell out by the way, that vpon ſome *Conference* which hee had with the King touching this buſines, the King (who had a great dexteritie in getting ſodainely into the boſome of *Ambaſſadors* of forraine *Princes*, if he liked the men; Inſomuch as hee would many times communicate with them of his owne

owne offaires, yea and employ them in his ſeruice) fell into ſpeach and diſcourſe incidently, concerning the ending of the *Debates* and differences with *Scotland*. For the King naturally did not loue the barren *Warr* with *Scotland*, though he made his profit of the *Noiſe* of them. And he wanted not in the *Councell* of *Scotland* thoſe that would aduiſe their King to meet him at the halfe way, & to giue ouer the *Warre* with *England*; pretending to bee good *Patriots*, but indeed fauouring the affaires of the King. Onely his heart was too great to beginne with *Scotland* for the motion of *Peace*. On the other ſide, hee had met with an *Allie* of FERDINANDO of *Arragon*, as fit for his turne as could bee. For after that King FERDINANDO had, vpon aſſured Confidence of the *Marriage* to ſucceed, taken vpon him the perſon of a *Fraternall Allie* to the King, hee would not let (in a *Spaniſh grauitie*) to counſell the King in his owne affaires. And the King on his part not beeing wanting to himſelfe, but making vſe of euery mans humours, made his aduantage of this in ſuch things as hee thought either not decent, or not pleaſant to proceed from himſelfe; putting them off as done by the *Counſell* of FERDINANDO. Wherefore hee was content that HIALAS (as in a matter mooued and aduiſed from HIALAS himſelfe) ſhould go into *Scotland*, to treat of a *Concord* betweene the two Kings. HIALAS tooke it vpon him: and comming to the *Scottiſh* King, after hee had with much Art brought King IAMES to hearken to the more ſafe and quiet Counſells, wrote vnto the King, that hee hoped that *Peace* would with no great difficultie cement and cloſe, if he would ſend ſome wiſe and temperate *Counſellour* of his owne, that might treat of the *Conditions*. Whereupon the King directed *Biſhop* FOX (who at that time was at his *Caſtle* of *Norham*) to conferre with HIALAS, and they both to treate with

ſome *Commiſsioners*, deputed from the *Scottiſh* King. The *Commiſsioners* on both ſides met. But after much diſpute vpon the *Articles* and *Conditions* of *Peace*, propounded vpon either part, they could not conclude a *Peace*. The chiefe *Impediment* thereof was the demand of the King, to haue PERKIN deliuered into his hands, as a *Reproach* to all Kings, and a *Perſon* not protected by the *Law* of *Nations*. The King of *Scotland*, on the other ſide, peremptorily denied ſo to doe; ſaying, That hee (for his part) was no *Competent Iudge* of PERKINS Title: But that hee had receiued him as a *Suppliant*, protected him as a Perſon fled for *Refuge*, eſpouſed him with his *Kinſwoman*, and aided him with his *Armes*, vpon the beliefe that hee was a *Prince*; And therefore that hee could not now with his Honour ſo vnrippe and (in a ſort) put a *Lye* vpon all that hee had ſaid and done before, as to deliuer him vp to his Enemies. The *Biſhop* likewiſe (who had certaine proud inſtructions from the King, at the leaſt in the *Front*, though there were a pliant clauſe at the *Foot*, that remitted all to the *Biſhops* diſcretion, and required him by no meanes to breake off in ill tearmes) after that hee had fayled to obtaine the deliuerie of PERKIN, did mooue a ſecond point of his *Inſtructions*; which was, that the *Scottiſh* King would giue the King an *Enteruiew* in Perſon at *Newcaſtle*. But this beeing reported to the *Scottiſh* King, his anſwere was; *That hee meant to treat a Peace, and not to goe a begging for it.* The *Biſhop* alſo (according to another Article of his *Inſtructions*) demanded *Reſtitution* of the Spoyles taken by the *Scottiſh*, or *Damages* for the ſame. But the *Scottiſh Commiſsioners* anſwered; *That that was but as Water ſpilt vpon the ground, which could not bee gotten vp againe; and that the Kings People were better able to beare the loſſe, then their Maſter to repaire it.* But in the end (as Perſons capable of reaſon)

on

on both ſides they made rather a kind of *Receſſe*, then a *Breach* of *Treaty*, and concluded vpon a *Truce* for ſome moneths following. But the King of *Scotland*, though hee would not formally retract his Iudgement of PERKIN, wherein hee had engaged himſelfe ſo farre; yet in his priuate opinion, vpon often ſpeach with the *Engliſh-men*, and diuers other aduertiſements, began to ſuſpect him for a *Counterfeit*. Wherefore in a Noble faſhion hee called him vnto him, and recounted the Benefits and fauours that hee had done him, in making him his *Allie*, and in prouoking a Mightie and Opulent King by an *Offenſiue Warre* in his *Quarrell*, for the ſpace of two yeares together. Nay more, that hee had refuſed an Honourable *Peace*, whereof hee had a faire Offer, if hee would haue deliuered him; and that to keepe his promiſe with him, hee had deeply offended both his *Nobles* and *People*, whom hee might not hold in any long diſcontent. And therefore required him to thinke of his owne *Fortunes*, and to chooſe out ſome fitter place for his *Exile*: Telling him withall, that hee could not ſay, but the *Engliſh* had forſaken him before the *Scottiſh*; for that vpon two ſeueral Trials, none had declared themſelues on his ſide. But neuertheleſſe hee would make good what he ſaid to him at his firſt receiuing, which was; *That hee ſhould not repent him, for putting himſelfe into his hands*; For that he would not caſt him off, but helpe him with Shipping and meanes, to tranſport him where hee ſhould deſire. PERKIN, not deſcending at all from his *Stage-like* Greatneſſe, anſwered the King in few words; *That hee ſawe his time was not yet come; But whatſoeuer his* Fortunes *were, hee ſhould both thinke and ſpeake* Honour *of the King*. Taking his leaue, hee would not think on *Flanders*, doubting it was but hollow ground for him, ſince the *Treaty* of the *Arch-Duke* concluded the yeare before; but tooke his *Ladie*, and ſuch Followers

as would not leaue him, and ſailed ouer into *Ireland*.

This Twelfth yeare of the King, a little before this time, *Pope* ALEXANDER (who loued beſt thoſe *Princes* that were furtheſt off, and with whom hee had leaſt to doe) taking very thankefully the Kings late entrance into *League*, for the defence of *Italie*, did remunerate him with an *Hallowed-Sword*, and *Cap-of-Maintenance* ſent by his *Nuncio*. *Pope* INNOCENT had done the like, but it was not receiued in that *Glory*. For the King appointed the *Maior* and his *Brethren* to meet the *Popes Orator* at *London-Bridge*, and all the *Streets* between the *Bridge-foot* and the Palace of *Paules* (where the King then lay) were garniſhed with the *Citizens*, ſtanding in their *Liueries*. And the Morrow after (beeing *All-hallowes day*) the King, attended with many of his *Prelates*, *Nobles*, and *Principall Courtiers*, went in *Proceſsion* to *Pauls*, and the *Cap* and *Sword* were borne before him. And after the *Proceſsion*, the king himſelfe remaining ſeated in the *Quire*, the *Lord Archbiſhop* vpon the greece of the *Quire*, made a long *Oration*, ſetting forth the greatneſſe and *Eminencie* of that *Honour*, which the *Pope* (in theſe Ornaments and Enſignes of *Benediction*) had done the King; and how rarely, and vpon what high deſerts they vſed to bee beſtowed. And then recited the Kings principall *Acts* and *Merits*, which had made him appeare worthy in the eies of his *Holineſſe* of this great *Honour*.

All this while the *Rebellion* of *Cornewall* (whereof wee haue ſpoken) ſeemed to haue no Relation to PERKIN; ſaue that perhaps PERKINS *Proclamation* had ſtricken vpon the right Veine, in promiſing to lay downe *Exactions* and *Payments*, and ſo had made them now and then haue a *Kind-thought* on PERKIN. But now theſe *Bubbles* by much ſtirring began to meet, as they

they vſe to doo vpon the top of *Water*. The Kings lenitie (by that time the *Corniſh Rebels*, who were taken and pardoned, and (as it was ſaid) many of them ſould by them that had taken them, for twelue pence and two ſhillings a-peece, were come downe into their Countrey) had rather imbouldened them, than reclaymed them. Inſomuch, as they ſtucke not to ſay to their Neighbours and Countrey-men, that *The King did well to pardon them, for that hee knew hee ſhould leaue fewe Subiects in* England, *if hee hanged all that were of their minde*: And beganne whetting and inciting one another to renew the *Commotion*. Some of the ſubtileſt of them, hearing of PERKINS beeing in *Ireland*, found meanes to ſend to him, to let him knowe, that if hee would come ouer to them, they would ſerue him.

When PERKIN heard this Newes, hee beganne to take heart againe, and aduiſed vpon it with his *Councell*, which were principally three; HERNE a *Mercer*, that had fledde for Debt; SKELTON a *Taylor*, and ASTLEY a *Scriuener*: for, *Secretarie* FRION was gone. Theſe tould him, that hee was mightily ouerſeene, both when hee went into *Kent*, and when hee went into *Scotland*: The one beeing a place ſo neere *London*, and vnder the Kings Noſe; and the other, a Nation ſo diſtaſted with the People of *England*, that if they had loued him neuer ſo well, yet they would neuer haue taken his part in that Companie. But if hee had beene ſo happie, as to haue beene in *Cornewall* at the firſt, when the People began to take *Armes* there, hee had beene crowned at *Weſtminſter* before this time. For, theſe Kings (as hee had now experience) would ſell poore *Princes* for ſhooes: But hee muſt rely wholly vpon *People*; and therefore aduiſed him to ſayle ouer with all poſsible ſpeed into *Cornewall*. Which, accordingly hee did; hauing in his Companie

foure ſmall *Barks*, with ſome ſix ſcore or ſeuen ſcore fighting men. Hee arriued in *September* at *Whitſand-Bay*; and forthwith came to *Bodmin*, the *Black-ſmiths* Town: Where there aſſembled vnto him to the number of three thouſand men of the rude People. There he ſet forth a new *Proclamation*, ſtroaking the People with faire Promiſes, and humouring them with *Inuectiues* againſt the King and his *Gouernment*. And, as it fareth with *Smoke*, that neuer looſeth it ſelf till it bee at the higheſt; hee did now before his end raiſe his *Stile*, intituling himſelf no more RICHARD, *Duke* of *York*; but RICHARD the Fourth, King of *England*. His *Councell* aduiſed him, by all meanes, to make himſelfe *Maſter* of ſome good walled *Towne*; as well to make his Men finde the ſweetneſſe of rich *Spoyles*, and to allure to him all looſe and loſt *People*, by like hopes of *Bootie*; as to bee a ſure *Retrait* to his *Forces*, in caſe they ſhould haue any ill *Day*, or vnluckie *Chance* in the *Field*. Wherefore they tooke heart to them, and went on, and beſieged the Citie of *Exceſter*, the principall *Towne* for Strength and Wealth in thoſe Parts.

When they were comne before *Exceſter*, they forbare to vſe any Force at the firſt; but made continuall *Shouts* and *Out-cries*, to terrifie the *Inhabitants*. They did likewiſe in diuerſe places call and talke to them from vnder the Walls, to ioyne with them, and bee of their *Partie*; telling them, that The King would make them another *London*, if they would bee the firſt *Towne* that ſhould acknowledge him. But they had not the wit to ſend to them, in any orderly faſhion, *Agents* or *choſen Men*, to tempt them, and to treat with them. The Citizens on their part ſhewed themſelues ſtout and loyall Subiects. Neither was there ſo much as any *Tumult* or *Diuiſion* amongſt them: but all prepared themſelues for a valiant *Defenſe*, and making good

good the *Towne*. For, well they ſaw, that the *Rebels* were of no ſuch Number or Power, that they needed to feare them as yet: and well they hoped, that before their *Numbers* encreaſed, the Kings *Succours* would come-in. And, howſoeuer, they thought it the extreameſt of Euils, To put themſelues at the mercy of thoſe hungry and diſorderly People. Wherefore, ſetting all things in good order within the *Towne*, they neuertheleſſe let-downe with Cords, from ſeuerall parts of the Walls priuily, ſeuerall *Meſſengers* (that, if one came to miſchance, another might paſſe-on) which ſhould aduertiſe the King of the State of the *Towne*, and implore his Aid. PERKIN alſo doubted, that Succours would come ere long; and therefore reſolued to vſe his vtmoſt Force to aſſault the *Towne*: And for that purpoſe, hauing mounted *Scaling-Ladders* in diuerſe places vpon the Walls, made at the ſame inſtant an *Attempt* to force one of the *Gates*. But, hauing no *Artillerie* nor *Engines*, and finding that hee could doo no good by ramming with Logges of *Timber*, nor by the vſe of Iron *Barres* and Iron *Crowes*, and ſuch other meanes at hand, hee had no way left him, but to ſet one of the *Gates* on fire: which hee did. But the Citizens, well perceiuing the Danger, before the *Gate* could bee fully conſumed, blocked vp the *Gate*, and ſome ſpace about it on the inſide, with Fagots and other Fuell: which they likewiſe ſet on fire, and ſo repulſed fire with fire; And, in the meane time, raiſed vp *Rampiers* of earth, and caſt vp deep *Trenches*, to ſerue in ſtead of *Wall* and *Gate*. And for the *Eſcaladaes*, they had ſo bad ſucceſſe, as the *Rebels* were driuen from the *Wals*, with the loſſe of two hundred men.

The King, when hee heard of PERKINS Siege of *Exceſter*, made ſport with it, and ſaid to them that were about him, that *The King of Rake-hells was landed in the Weſt, and that hee hoped now to haue the honour*

to

to ſee him, which hee could neuer yet doo. And it appeared plainely to thoſe that were about the King, that hee was indeed much ioied with the newes of PERKINS beeing in *Engliſh Ground*, where hee could haue no retrait by Land; thinking now, that hee ſhould bee cured of thoſe priuie *Stitches*, which hee had long had about his *Heart*, and had ſometimes broken his *Sleeps* in the middeſt of all his Felicitie. And, to ſet all mens hearts on fire, hee did by all poſsible meanes let it appeare, that thoſe, who ſhould now doo him ſeruice to make an end of theſe troubles, ſhould bee no leſſe accepted of him, than hee that came vpon the *Eleuenth Houre*, and had the whole *Wages* of the *Daie*. Therefore now (like the end of a *Play*) a great number came vpon the *Stage* at once. Hee ſent the *Lord Chamberlain*, and the *Lord* BROOK, and Sir RICE AP THOMAS, with expedite Forces to ſpeed to *Exceſter*, to the Reſcue of the Towne, and to ſpread the Fame of his owne following in Perſon with a *Royall Armie*. The *Earle* of *Deuonſhire*, and his Son, with the CAROES, and the FVLFORDES, and other principall Perſons of *Deuonſhire* (vncalled from the *Court*, but hearing that the Kings heart was ſo much bent vpon this Seruice) made haſte with *Troupes*, that they had rayſed, to bee the firſt that ſhould ſuccour the Citie of *Exceſter*, and preuent the Kings Succours. The *Duke* of *Buckingham* likewiſe, with many braue *Gentlemen*, put themſelues in *Armes*, not ſtaying either the Kings or the *Lord Chamberlaines* comming on, but making a Bodie of Forces of themſelues, the more to indeare their merite; ſignifying to the King their readineſſe, and deſiring to knowe his pleaſure. So that, according to the Prouerb, *In the comming downe, euerie Saint did help.*

PERKIN, hearing this Thunder of *Armes*, and Preparations againſt him from ſo many Parts, raiſed his

his *Siege*, and marched to *Taunton*; beginning alreadie to ſquint one Eye vpon the *Crowne*, and another vpon the *Sanctuarie*: Though the *Corniſh-men* were become, like *Metall* often fired and quenched, churliſh, and that would ſooner breake then bow; ſwearing and vowing not to leaue him, till the vttermoſt drop of their bloud were ſpilt. Hee was at his riſing from *Exceſter* betweene ſix and ſeuen thouſand ſtrong, many hauing come vnto him, after hee was ſet before *Exceſter*, vpon Fame of ſo great an *Enterpriſe*, and to partake of the *Spoile*; Though vpon the rayſing of his *Siege*, ſome did ſlippe away. When hee was come neare *Taunton*, hee diſſembled all feare, and ſeemed all the day to vſe diligence in preparing all things readie to fight. But about Midnight, hee fled with threeſcore Horſe to *Bewley*, in the *New-Forreſt*, where hee and diuers of his Companie regiſtred themſelues *Sanctuarie-men*, leauing his *Corniſh-men* to the *Foure Winds*; But yet thereby eaſing them of their *Vow*, and vſing his wonted Compaſsion, *Not to bee by, when his Subiects blouds ſhould bee ſpilt.* The King, as ſoone as hee heard of PERKINS *Flight*, ſent preſently fiue hundred Horſe to purſue and apprehend him, before hee ſhould get either to the *Sea*, or to that ſame little *Iſland*, called a *Sanctuarie*. But they came too late for the latter of theſe. Therefore all they could doe, was to beſet the *Sanctuarie*, and to maintayne a ſtrong *Watch* about it, till the Kings pleaſure were further knowne. As for the reſt of the *Rebels*, they (beeing deſtituted of their head) without ſtroke ſtricken, ſubmitted themſelues vnto the Kings Mercie. And the King, who commonly drew Bloud (as *Phyſicians* doe) rather to ſaue Life then to ſpill it, and was neuer *Cruell* when hee was *Secure*; now hee ſaw the Danger was paſt, pardoned them all in the end, except ſome few deſperate perſons which hee reſerued

reſerued to bee executed, the better to ſet of his *Mercie* towards the reſt. There were alſo ſent with all ſpeed ſome Horſe to Saint MICHAELS *Mount* in *Cornewall*, where the *Ladie* KATHERIN GORDON was left by her Husband, whom in all Fortunes ſhee entirely loued; adding the vertues of a *Wife*, to the vertues of her *Sexe*. The King ſent in the greater diligence, not knowing whether ſhee might bee with *Child*; whereby the buſineſſe would not haue ended in PERKINS perſon. When ſhee was brought to the King, it was commonly ſaid, that the king receiued her not onely with *Compaſsion*, but with *Affection*; *Pitie* giuing more *Impreſsion* to her excellent *Beautie*. Wherefore comforting her (to ſerue as well his *Eye*, as his *Fame*) hee ſent her to his *Queene*, to remaine with her; giuing her very honourable *Allowance* for the ſupport of her Eſtate: which ſhee enioyed both during the Kings life, and many yeares after. The name of the *White-Roſe* (which had beene giuen to her Husbands *Falſe-Title*) was continued in common ſpeach to her true *Beautie*.

The King went forwards on his Iourney, and made a Ioyfull entrance into *Exceſter*, where hee gaue the *Citizens* great commendations and thankes; and taking the *Sword* hee wore, from his ſide, hee gaue it to the Maior, and commanded it ſhould bee euer after carried before him. There alſo hee cauſed to bee executed ſome of the *Ring-leaders* of the *Corniſh-men*, in ſacrifice to the *Citizens*, whom they had put in feare, and trouble. At *Exceſter* the King conſulted with his *Councell*, whether hee ſhould offer life to PERKIN, if hee would quit the *Sanctuarie*, and voluntarily ſubmit himſelfe. The *Councell* were diuided in opinion. Some aduiſed the King to take him out of *Sanctuary* perforce, and to put him to death, as in a caſe of *Neceſsity*, which in it ſelfe diſpenſeth with *Conſecrated Places* and things

things. Wherein they doubted not alſo, but the King ſhould find the *Pope* tractable, to ratifie his *Deed*, either by *Declaration*, or (at leaſt) by *Indulgence*. Others were of opinion (ſince all was now ſafe, and no further hurt could bee done) that it was not worth the expoſing of the King to new *Scandall* and *Enuy*. A third ſort fell vpon the opinion, that it was not poſſible for the King euer, either to ſatisfie the world well touching the *Impoſture*, or to learne out the bottome of the *Conſpiracie*, except by promiſe of *Life* and *Pardon*, and other faire meanes, hee ſhould get PERKIN into his hands. But they did all in their *Preambles* much bemoane the Kings Caſe, with a kind of *Indignation* at his *Fortune*; That a *Prince* of his high *Wiſedome* and *Vertue*, ſhould haue been ſo long, and ſo oft exerciſed and vexed with *Idols*. But the King ſaid, that it was the *Vexation* of GOD *Almightie* himſelfe, to be vexed with *Idols*, and therefore that that was not to trouble any of his Friends. And that for himſelfe, hee alwayes deſpiſed them; but was grieued that they had put his *People* to ſuch trouble and miſery. But (in Concluſion) hee leaned to the third opinion, and ſo ſent ſome to deale with PERKIN. Who ſeeing himſelfe Priſoner, and deſtitute of all hopes, hauing tried *Princes* and *People*, *Great* and *Small*, and found all either falſe, faint, or infortunate, did gladly accept of the Condition. The King did alſo (while hee was at *Exceſter*) appoint the *Lord* DARCIE, and others *Commiſſioners*, for the Fining of all ſuch, as were of any value, and had any hand or partaking in the aide or comfort of PERKIN, or the *Corniſh-men*, either in the *Field*, or in the *Flight*.

Theſe *Commiſſioners* proceeded with ſuch ſtrictneſſe and ſeueritie, as did much obſcure the Kings Mercie in ſparing of *Blood*, with the bleeding of ſo much *Treaſure*. PERKIN was brought vnto the Kings Court,

but not to the Kings preſence; though the King (to ſatisfie his *Curioſitie*) ſaw him ſometimes out of a window, or in paſſage. Hee was in ſhew at libertie, but guarded with all care and watch that was poſſible, and willed to follow the King to *London*. But from his firſt appearance vpon the *Stage*, in his new perſon of a *Sycophant* or *Iugler*, in ſtead of his former Perſon of a *Prince*, all men may thinke how hee was expoſed to the deriſion, not onely of the *Courtiers*, but alſo of the *Common-People*, who flocked about him as hee went along; that one might knowe a farre of, where the *Owle* was, by the *Flight* of *Birds*. Some mocking, ſome wondring, ſome curſing, ſome prying and picking matter out of his Countenance and Geſture, to talke of. So that the falſe *Honour* and *Reſpects* which hee had ſo long enioyed, was plentifully repaid in *Scorne* and *Contempt*. As ſoone as hee was come to *London*, the King gaue alſo the *Citie* the ſolace of this *May-Game*. For hee was conueighed leaſurely on Horſe-backe (but not in any ignominious faſhion) through *Cheape-ſide*, and *Cornewall*, to the *Tower*, and from thence backe againe vnto *Weſtminſter*, with the *Charme* of a thouſand taunts and reproches. But to amend the *Show*, there followed a little diſtance of PERKIN, an inward *Councellour* of his, One that had beene *Serieant Farrier* to the King. This Fellow, when PERKIN tooke *Sanctuarie*, choſe rather to take an *Holy-Habit*, then an *Holy Place*, and clad himſelfe like an *Hermite*, and in that weede wandred about the *Connrie*, till hee was diſcouered, and taken. But this Man was bound hand and foote vpon the Horſe, and came not backe with PERKIN, but was left at the *Tower*, and within few dayes after Executed. Soone after, now that PERKIN could tell better what himſelfe was, he was diligently examined; and after his *Confeſſion* taken, an *Extract* was made of ſuch parts of them,

as

as were thought fit to bee divulged, which was Printed and diſperſed abroad. Wherein the King did himſelfe no Right. For as there was a laboured *Tale* of particulars, of PERKINS *Father*, and *Mother*, and *Grandſire*, and *Grand-mother*, and *Vnckles*, and *Coſens*, by *Names* and *Sirnames*, and from what places hee trauailed vp and downe; ſo there was little or nothing to purpoſe of any thing concerning his *Deſignes*, or any *Practiſes* that had beene held with him; nor the *Ducheſſe* of *Burgundie* her ſelfe (that all the World did take knowledge of, as the *Perſon* that had put *Life* and *Being* into the whole *Buſineſſe*) ſo much as named or pointed at. So that men miſſing of that they looked for, looked about for they knew not what, and were in more doubt then before. But the King choſe rather not to ſatisfie, then to kindle *Coales*. At that time alſo it did not appeare by any new *Examinations* or *Commitments*, that any other Perſon of qualitie was diſcouered or appeached, though the Kings cloſeneſſe made that a *Doubt-Dormant*.

About this time, a great *Fire* in the night time ſodainely began at the Kings *Pallace* of *Shyne*, neare vnto the Kings owne Lodgings, whereby a great part of the Building was conſumed, with much coſtly Houſhold-ſtuffe; which gaue the King occaſion of Building from the ground that fine *Pile* of *Richmond*, which is now ſtanding.

Somewhat before this time alſo, there fell out a memorable Accident. There was one SEBASTIAN GABATO, a *Venetian*, dwelling in *Briſtow*, a man ſeene and expert in *Coſmographie* and *Nauigation*. This Man ſeeing the Succeſſe, and emulating perhaps the enterpriſe of CHRISTOPHERVS COLVMBVS in that fortunate diſcouerie towards the *Southweſt*, which had beene by him made ſome ſixe yeares before; conceited with himſelfe, that *Lands*

might likewiſe bee diſcouered towards the *Northweſt*. And ſurely it may bee hee had more firme and pregnant Coniectures of it, then COLVMBVS had of this at the firſt. For the two great *Iſlands* of the *Old* and *New World*, beeing (in the ſhape and making of them) broad towards the *North*, and pointed towards the *South*; it is likely, that the diſcouerie firſt beganne where the *Lands* did neareſt meet. And there had beene before that time a diſcouerie of ſome *Lands*, which they tooke to bee *Iſlands*, and were indeed the *Continent* of *America*, towards the *Northweſt*. And it may bee, that ſome Relation of this nature comming afterwards to the knowledge of COLVMBVS, and by him ſuppreſſed, (deſirous rather to make his Enterpriſe the *Child* of his *Science* and *Fortune*, then the *Follower* of a former *Diſcouerie*) did giue him better aſſurance, that all was not *Sea*, from the *weſt* of *Europe* and *Africke* vnto *Aſia*, then either SENECA's *Propheſie*, or PLATO's *Antiquities*, or the Nature of the *Tides*, and *Land-winds*, and the like, which were the *Coniectures* that were giuen out, whereupon hee ſhould haue relyed. Though I am not ignorant, that it was likewiſe laid vnto the caſuall and *wind-beaten Diſcouerie* (a little before) of a *Spaniſh Pilot*, who died in the houſe of COLVMBVS. But this GABATO bearing the King in hand, that hee would find out an *Iſland* endued with rich Commodities, procured him to man and victuall a Ship at *Briſtow*, for the diſcouerie of that *Iſland*. With whom ventured alſo three ſmall Shippes of *London-Merchants*, fraught with ſome groſſe and ſleight Wares, fit for Commerce with barbarous people. Hee ſayled (as hee affirmed at his Returne, and made a *Card* thereof) very farre *Weſtwards*, with a *Quarter* of the *North*, on the *North-ſide* of *Tierra de Labrador*, vntill hee came to the *Latitude* of ſixtie ſeuen Degrees and an halfe, finding

finding the *Seas* ſtill open. It is certaine alſo, that the *Kings* Fortune had a tender of that great *Empire* of the *Weſt-Indies*. Neither was it a *Refuſall* on the Kings part, but a *Delay* by accident, that put by ſo great an *Acqueſt*. For CHRISTOPHERVS COLVMBVS refuſed by the King of *Portugall* (who would not embrace at once both *Eaſt* and *Weſt*) imployed his Brother BARTHOLOMEVS COLVMBVS vnto King HENRY, to negotiate for his Diſcouerie. And it ſo fortuned, that hee was taken by *Pirates* at *Sea*, by which accidentall impediment hee was long ere hee came to the King. So long, that before hee had obtayned a Capitulation with the King for his Brother, the Enterpriſe by him was atchieued, and ſo the *Weſt-Indies* by *Prouidence* were then reſerued for the *Crowne* of *Caſtilia*. Yet this ſharpned the King ſo, that not onely in this Voyage, but againe in the Sixteenth yere of his Raigne, and likewiſe in the Eighteenth thereof, hee granted forth new *Commiſſions*, for the *Diſcouerie* and inueſting of vnknowne *Lands*.

In this Fourteenth yeare alſo (by GODS wonderfull prouidence, that boweth things vnto his Will, and hangeth great *Weights* vpon ſmall *Wyres*) there fell out a trifling and vntoward Accident, that drew on great and happie effects. During the Truce with *Scotland*, there were certaine *Scottiſh young Gentlemen*, that came into *Norham* Towne, and there made merrie with ſome of the *Engliſh* of the *Towne*. And hauing little to doe, went ſometimes forth, and would ſtand looking vpon the *Caſtle*. Some of the *Garriſon* of the *Caſtle*, obſeruing this their doing twice or thrice, and hauing not their minds purged of the late ill bloud of *Hoſtilitie*, either ſuſpected them, or quarrelled them for *Spies*. Whereupon they fell at ill *Words*, and from *Words* to *Blowes*; ſo that many were wounded of either ſide, and the *Scottiſh-men* (beeing ſtran-

ſtrangers in the *Towne*) had the worſt. In ſo much as ſome of them were ſlaine, and the reſt made haſte home. The matter beeing complained on, and often debated before the *Wardens* of the *Marches* of both ſides, and no good order taken, the *King* of *Scotland* tooke it to himſelfe, and beeing much kindled, ſent a *Herald* to the King to make proteſtation, That if Reparation were not done, according to the Conditions of the *Truce*, his King did denounce *Warre*. The King (who had often tryed *Fortune*, and was inclined to *Peace*) made anſwere; That what had been done, was vtterly againſt his will, and without his *Priuitie*. But if the *Garriſon-Souldiers* had been in fault, he would ſee them puniſhed, and the *Truce* in all points to bee preſerued. But this anſwer ſeemed to the *Scottiſh* King but a Delay, to make the Complaint breath out with time; and therefore it did rather exaſperate him, then ſatisfie him. *Biſhop* Fox, vnderſtanding from the King, that the *Scottiſh* King was ſtill diſcontent and impatient, beeing troubled that the occaſion of breaking of the *Truce* ſhould grow from his men, ſent many humble and deprecatorie letters to the *Scottiſh* King, to appeaſe him. Whereupon King IAMES, mollified by the *Biſhops* ſubmiſſe and eloquent Letters, wrote back vnto him; That though he were in part moued by his *Letters*, yet he ſhould not be fully ſatisfied, except hee ſpake with him; as well about the compounding of the preſent differences, as about other matters, that might concerne the good of both *Kingdomes*. The *Biſhop* aduiſing firſt with the King, tooke his Iourney for *Scotland*. The meeting was at *Melroſſe*, an *Abbey* of the *Ceſterſians*, where the King then abode. The King firſt roundly vttered vnto the *Biſhop* his offence conceiued for the inſolent Breach of *Truce*, by his men of *Norham Caſtle*. Whereunto *Biſhop* FOX made ſuch an humble and ſmooth anſwere, as it was like *Oyle* into

the

the *wound*, whereby it began to heale. And this was done in the preſence of the King and his *Counſell*. After, the King ſpake with the *Biſhop* apart, and opened himſelfe vnto him, ſaying; That theſe temporarie *Truces* and *Peaces* were ſoone made, and ſoone broken: But that he deſired a ſtraiter Amitie with the King of *England*, diſcouering his mind; that if the King would giue him in *Marriage*, the *Ladie* MARGARET, his eldeſt *Daughter*, That indeed might bee a *Knot* indiſſoluble. That hee knew well what Place and Authoritie the *Biſhop* deſeruedly had with his *Maſter*. Therefore, if hee would take the buſineſſe to heart, and deale in it effectually, hee doubted not but it would ſucceed well. The *Biſhop* anſwered ſoberly, that hee thought himſelfe rather happie, then worthy, to bee an Inſtrument in ſuch a matter; but would doe his beſt endeauour. Wherefore the *Biſhop* returning to the King, and giuing account what had paſſed, and finding the King more then well diſpoſed in it, gaue the King aduiſe; firſt to proceed to a Concluſion of *Peace*, and then to goe on with the Treatie of *Marriage*, by degrees. Hereupon a *Peace* was concluded, which was publiſhed a little before *Chriſtmaſſe*, in the Fourteenth yeare of the Kings *Raigne*, to continue for both the Kings liues, and the ouer-liuer of them, and a yeare after. In this *Peace* there was an *Article* contayned, that no *Engliſh-man* ſhould enter into *Scotland*, and no *Scottiſh-man* into *England*, without Letters Commendatorie from the Kings of eyther *Nation*. This at the firſt ſight might ſeeme a meanes to continue a ſtrangeneſſe betweene the *Nations*; but it was done, to locke in the *Borderers*.

This yeare there was alſo borne to the King a third *Sonne*, who was chriſtned by the name of EDMVND, and ſhortly after dyed. And much about the ſame time came newes of the death of *Charles* the *French-King*;

King; For whom there were celebrated Solemne and Princely *Obſequies*.

It was not long, but PERKIN (who was made of *Quick-ſiluer*, which is hard to hold or impriſon) began to ſtirre. For deceiuing his *Keepers*, hee tooke him to his heeles, and made ſpeed to the *Sea-coaſts*. But preſently all Corners were laid for him, and ſuch diligent purſuit and ſearch made, as he was faine to turne backe, and get him to the Houſe of *Bethleem*, called the *Priorie* of *Shyne*, (which had the priuiledge of *Sanctuarie*) and put himſelfe into the hands of the *Prior* of that *Monaſterie*. The *Prior* was thought an *Holy Man*, and much reuerenced in thoſe dayes. He came to the King, and beſought the King for PERKINS life only, leauing him otherwiſe to the Kings diſcretion. Many about the King were againe more hot then euer, to haue the King to take him forth, and hang him. But the King (that had an high ſtomacke, and could not hate any that hee deſpiſed) bid, *Take him forth, and ſet the Knaue in the Stocks*. And ſo promiſing the *Prior* his life, hee cauſed him to bee brought forth. And within two or three dayes after, vpon a *Scaffold* ſet vp in the *Palace-Court* at *Weſtminſter*, hee was fettered and ſet in the *Stocks*, for the whole day. And the next day after, the like was done by him at the *Croſſe* in *Cheape-ſide*, and in both Places hee read his *Confeſſion*, of which we made mention before; and was from *Cheape-ſide* conueighed and layed vp in the *Tower*. Notwithſtanding all this, the King was (as was partly touched before) growne to bee ſuch a *Partner* with *Fortune*, as no body could tell what *Actions* the *One*, and what the *Other* owned. For it was beleeued generally, that PERKIN was betrayed, and that this Eſcape was not without the Kings priuitie, who had him all the time of his Flight in a Line; and that the King did this, to picke a Quarrell to him to put him to death, and to be ridde of

of him at once. But this is not probable. For that the ſame *Inſtruments* who obſerued him in his *Flight*, might haue kept him from getting into *Sanctuarie*.

But it was ordained, that this *Winding-Iuie* of a PLANTAGENET, ſhould kill the true *Tree* it ſelfe. For PERKIN, after hee had beene a while in the *Tower*, began to inſinuate himſelfe into the fauour and kindneſſe of his *Keepers*, Seruants to the *Lieutenant* of the *Tower* Sir IOHN DIGBIE, being foure in number; STRANGWAIES, BLEWET, ASTWOOD, and LONG-ROGER. Theſe *Varlets*, with mountaines of *Promiſes*, hee ſought to corrupt, to obtaine his *Eſcape*. But knowing well, that his owne *Fortunes* were made ſo contemptible, as hee could feede no mans *Hopes* (and by *Hopes* hee muſt worke, for *Rewards* he had none) he had contriued with himſelfe a vaſt and tragicall Plot; which was, to draw into his Companie EDWARD PLANTAGENET *Earle* of *Warwicke*, then Priſoner in the *Tower*; whom the wearie life of a long *Impriſonment*, and the often and renewing Feares of being put to *Death*, had ſoftned to take any Impreſſion of *Councell* for his *Libertie*. This young *Prince* hee thought theſe Seruants would looke vpon, though not vpon himſelfe. And therefore after that by ſome *Meſſage* by one or two of them, hee had taſted of the *Earles* Conſent; it was agreed, that theſe foure ſhould murder their *Maſter* the *Lieutenant*, ſecretly in the night, and make their beſt of ſuch Money and portable Goods of his, as they ſhould finde readie at hand, and get the *Keyes* of the *Tower*, and preſently let forth PERKIN and the *Earle*. But this *Conſpiracie* was reuealed in time, before it could bee executed. And in this againe the Opinion of the Kings great *Wiſedome* did ſurcharge him with a ſiniſter *Fame*, that PERKIN was but his *Bait*, to entrap the *Earle* of *Warwicke*. And in the very Inſtant while

this *Conſpiracie* was in working (as if that alſo had been the Kings induſtrie) it was fatall, that there ſhould breake forth a *Counterfeit Earle* of *Warwicke*, a *Cordwainers* Sonne, whoſe name was RALPH WILFORD; a young man, taught and ſet on by an *Auguſtine Friar*, called PATRICKE. They both from the parts of *Suffolke*, came forwards into *Kent*, where they did not onely priuily and vnderhand giue out, that this WILFORD was the true *Earle* of *Warwicke*, but alſo the *Friar* finding ſome light Credence in the People, tooke the boldneſſe in the *Pulpit* to declare as much, and to incite the People to come into his Aide. Whereupon they were both preſently apprehended, and the young *Fellow* executed, and the *Friar* condemned to perpetuall *Impriſonment*. This alſo hapning ſo opportunely, to repreſent the danger to the Kings Eſtate, from the Earle of *Warwicke*, and thereby to colour the Kings ſeueritie that followed; together with the madneſſe of the *Friar*, ſo vainely and deſperately to divulge a *Treaſon*, before it had gotten any manner of ſtrength; and the ſauing of the *Friars* life, which neuerthelеſſe was (indeed) but the priuiledge of his *Order*; and the *Pitie* in the Common People (which if it runne in a ſtrong *Streame*, doth euer caſt vp *Scandal* and *Enuie*) made it generally rather talked, then belieued, that all was but the Kings deuiſe. But howſoeuer it were, hereupon PERKIN (that had offended againſt *Grace* now the third time) was at the laſt proceeded with, and by *Commiſsioners* of *Oyer* and *Determiner*, arraigned at *Weſtminſter*, vpon diuers *Treaſons* committed and perpetrated after his comming on land within this Kingdome (for ſo the *Iudges* aduiſed, for that he was a *Forreiner*) and condemned, and a few dayes after executed at *Tiburne*. Where he did againe openly read his *Confeſsion*, and take it vpon his *Death* to bee true. This was the end of this little *Cockatrice*

of

of a King, that was able to deſtroy thoſe that did not eſpie him firſt. It was one of the longeſt *Playes* of that kind, that hath beene in memorie; and might perhaps haue had another end, if hee had not met with a King both wiſe, ſtout, and fortunate.

As for PERKINS three *Councellors*, they had regiſtred themſelues *Sanctuarie-men* when their *Maſter* did. And whether vpon pardon obtained, or continuance within the *Priuiledge*, they came not to bee proceeded with.

There was executed with PERKIN the *Maior* of *Corke*, and his Sonne, who had beene principall Abettors of his Treaſons. And ſoone after were likewiſe condemned eight other Perſons, about the *Tower-Conſpiracie*, whereof foure were the *Lieutenants* men. But of thoſe Eight but two were executed. And immediatly after was arraigned before the *Earle* of *Oxford* (then for the time *High-Steward* of *England*) the poore *Prince* the *Earle* of *Warwicke*; not for the *Attempt* to eſcape ſimply (for that was not acted; And beſides, the *Impriſonment* not beeing for Treaſon, the *Eſcape* by Law could not bee Treaſon) But for conſpiring with PERKIN to raiſe ſedition, and to deſtroy the King. And the *Earle* confeſſing the *Inditement* had *Iudgement*, and was ſhortly after beheaded on *Tower-hill*.

This was alſo the end not onely of this Noble and Commiſerable Perſon EDWARD the *Earle* of *Warwicke*, eldeſt Sonne to the *Duke* of *Clarence*, but likewiſe of the *Line-Male* of the PLANTAGENETS, which had flouriſhed in great Royalty and Renowne, from the time of the famous King of *England* King HENRIE the Second. Howbeit it was a *Race* often dipped in their owne *Bloud*. It hath remayned ſince onely tranſplanted into other *Names*, as well of the *Imperiall Line*, as of other *Noble Houſes*. But it was

neither guilt of *Crime*, nor reaſon of *State*, that could quench the *Enuie* that was vpon the King for this *Execution*. So that hee thought good to export it out of the Land, and to lay it vpon his new *Allie* FERDINANDO King of *Spaine*. For theſe two Kings vnderſtanding one another at halfe a word, ſo it was that there were Letters ſhewed out of *Spaine*, whereby in the paſſages concerning the *Treatie* of the *Marriage*, FERDINANDO had written to the King in plaine termes, that hee ſaw no aſſurance of his *Succeſſion*, as long as the *Earle* of *Warwicke* liued; and that hee was loth to ſend his *Daughter* to Troubles and Dangers. But hereby, as the King did in ſome part remooue the Enuie from himſelfe; ſo hee did not obſerue, that hee did withall bring a kind of *Malediction* and Infauſting vpon the *Marriage*, as an ill *Prognoſticke*. Which in euent ſo farre proued true, as both *Prince* ARTHVR enioyed a very ſmall time after the *Marriage*, and the *Ladie* KATHERINE her ſelfe (a ſad and a religious woman) long after, when King HENRIE the Eight his reſolution of a *Diuorce* from her was firſt made knowne to her, vſed ſome words; *That ſhee had not offended, but it was a Judgement of* GOD, *for that her former Marriage was made in bloud*; meaning that of the *Earle* of *Warwicke*.

This fifteenth yeare of the King there was a great *Plague*, both in *London* and in diuers parts of the *Kingdome*. Wherefore the King after often change of *Places*, (whether to auoide the danger of the *Sickneſſe*, or to giue occaſion of an *Enteruiew* with the *Arch-Duke*, or both) ſayled ouer with his *Queene* to *Calice*. Vpon his comming thither, the *Arch-Duke* ſent an honourable *Ambaſſage* vnto him, aſwell to welcome him into thoſe parts, as to let him know, that (if it pleaſed him) hee would come and doe him reuerence. But it was ſaid withall; That the King might bee pleaſed to

ap-

appoint ſome place, that were out of any *Walled Towne* or Fortreſſe, for that hee had denyed the ſame vpon like occaſion to the *French* King. And though he ſaid, he made a great difference betweene the two Kings, yet hee would bee loth to giue a *Preſident*, that might make it after to bee expected at his hands, by another whom hee truſted leſſe. The King accepted of the Courteſie, and admitted of his Excuſe, and appointed the place to bee at *Saint* PETERS *Church* without *Calice*. But withall hee did viſite the *Arch-Duke* with *Ambaſſadors* ſent from himſelfe, which were the *Lord Saint* IOHN, and the *Secretarie*; vnto whom the *Arch-Duke* did the honour, as (going to *Maſſe* at *Saint Omers*) to ſet the *Lord Saint* IOHN on his right hand, and the *Secretarie* on his left, and ſo to ride betweene them to Church. The day appointed for the *Enteruiew*, the King went on Horſe-backe ſome diſtance from *Saint* PETERS *Church*, to receiue the *Arch-Duke*. And vpon their approaching, the *Arch-Duke* made haſte to light, and offered to hold the Kings *Stirrope* at his alighting; which the King would not permit, but deſcending from Horſe backe, they embraced with great affection, and withdrawing into the *Church* to a place prepared, they had long *Conference*, not onely vpon the Confirmation of former *Treaties*, and the freeing of *Commerce*, but vpon Croſſe *Marriages*, to bee had betweene the *Duke* of *Yorke* the *Kings* ſecond Sonne, and the *Arch-Dukes* Daughter; And againe betweene CHARLES the *Arch-Dukes* Sonne and Heire, and MARIE the *Kings* ſecond Daughter. But theſe *Bloſſoms* of vnripe *Marriages*, were but friendly wiſhes, and the *Aires* of louing *Entertainment*; though one of them came afterwards to Concluſion in *Treatie*, though not in *Effect*. But during the time that the two *Princes* conuerſed and communed together in the Suburbs of *Calice*, the Demonſtrations

tions on both ſides were paſſing hearty and affectionate, eſpecially on the part of the *Arch-Duke*. Who (beſides that hee was a *Prince* of an excellent good nature) beeing conſcious to himſelfe, how driely the King had beene vſed by his *Councell* in the matter of PERKIN, did ſtriue by all meanes to recouer it in the Kings Affection. And hauing alſo his eares continually beaten with the Councels of his *Father* and *Father-in-law*, who (in reſpect of their iealous hatred againſt the *French* King) did alwayes aduiſe the *Arch-Duke* to anchor himſelfe vpon the Amitie of King HENRIE of *England*; was glad vpon this occaſion, ao put in vre and practice their precepts, calling the King *Patron*, and *Father*, and *Protector*, (Theſe very words the King repeates; when hee certified of the louing behauiour of the *Arch-Duke* to the Citie) and what elſe hee could deuiſe, to expreſſe his loue and obſeruance to the King. There came alſo to the King the Gouernour of *Picardie*, and the Bailiffe of *Amiens*, ſent from *Lewis* the *French* King to doe him honour, and to giue him knowledge of his victorie and winning of the *Duchie* of *Millan*. It ſeemeth the King was well pleaſed with the honours hee receiued from thoſe parts, while hee was at *Calice*. For hee did himſelfe certifie all the Newes and Occurrents of them in euery particular, from *Calice*, to the *Maior* and *Aldermen* of *London*, which (no doubt) made no ſmall talke in the *Citie*. For the King, though hee could not entertaine the good will of the *Citizens*, as EDWARD the Fourth did; yet by Affabilitie and other Princely Graces, did euer make very much of them, and apply himſelfe to them.

This yeare alſo died IOHN MORTON, *Arch-Biſhop* of *Canterburie*, *Chancellor* of *England*, and *Cardinall*. Hee was a Wiſeman, and an Eloquent, but in his nature harſh, and haughtie; much accepted by the King, but enuied by the *Nobilitie*, and hated of the

Peo-

People. Neither was his name left out of PERKINS *Proclamation* for any good will, but they would not bring him in amongſt the Kings *Caſting-Counters*, becauſe hee had the *Image* and *Superſcription* vpon him of the *Pope*, in his *Honour* of *Cardinall.* Hee wanne the King with *Secrecie* and *Diligence*, but chiefly becauſe hee was his old Seruant in his leſſe *Fortunes:* And alſo for that (in his affections) hee was not without an inveterate malice againſt the Houſe of YORKE, vnder whom hee had beene in trouble. Hee was willing alſo to take *Enuie* from the King, more then the King was willing to put vpon him. For the King cared not for *Subterfuges*, but would ſtand *Enuy*, and appeare in any thing that was to his mind; which made *Enuie* ſtill grow vpon him more vniuerſall, but leſſe daring. But in the matter of Exactions, time did after ſhew, that the *Biſhop* in feeding the Kings humour, did rather temper it. Hee had beene by RICHARD the third committed (as in Cuſtody) to the *Duke* of *Buckingham*, whom hee did ſecretly incite to reuolt from King RICHARD. But after the *Duke* was engaged, and thought the *Biſhop* ſhould haue beene his chiefe *Pilot* in the *Tempeſt*, the *Biſhop* was gotten into the *Cock-boat*, and fled ouer beyond *Seas.* But whatſoeuer elſe was in the Man, hee deſerueth a moſt happie Memorie in that hee was the principall *Meane* of ioyning the two *Roſes.* Hee died of great yeares, but of ſtrong health and *Powers.*

The next yeare, which was the Sixteenth yeare of the King, and the yeare of our *Lord* one thouſand fiue hundred, was the yeare of *Iubile* at *Rome.* But *Pope* ALEXANDER, to ſaue the Hazard and Charges of mens Iourneys to *Rome*, thought good to make ouer thoſe *Graces* by Exchange, to ſuch as would pay a conuenient *Rate*, ſeeing they could not come to fetch them. For which purpoſe was ſent into *England*,

IAS-

IASPER PONS, a *Spaniard*, the *Popes Commiſsioner*, better choſen then were the *Commiſsioners* of *Pope* LEO afterwards imployed for *Germanie*; for hee carried the Buſineſſe with great wiſedome, and ſemblance of *Holineſſe*. In ſo much as hee leuied great ſummes of Money within this Land to the *Popes* vſe, with little or no *Scandall*. It was thought the King ſhared in the Money. But it appeareth by a Letter which *Cardinall* ADRIAN, the Kings *Penſioner*, wrote to the King from *Rome* ſome few yeares after, that this was not ſo. For this *Cardinall*, beeing to perſwade *Pope* IVLIVS on the Kings behalfe, to expedite the *Bull* of *Diſpenſation* for the *Marriage* betweene *Prince* HENRIE and the *Ladie* KATHERINE, finding the *Pope* difficile in granting thereof, doth vſe it as a principal Argument concerning the Kings Merit towards that *Sea*, that hee had touched none of thoſe *Deniers*, which had beene leuied by PONS in *England*. But that it might the better appeare (for the ſatisfaction of the Common people) that this was *Conſecrate Money*, the ſame *Nuncio* brought vnto the King a *Briefe* from the *Pope*, wherein the King was exhorted and ſummoned to come in Perſon againſt the *Turke*. For that the *Pope* (out of the care of an *Vniuerſall Father*) ſeeing almoſt vnder his eyes the Succeſſes and Progreſſes of that great Enemie of the *Faith*, had had in the *Conclaue*, and with the Aſſiſtance of the *Ambaſſadours* of forraine *Princes*, diuers *Conſultations* about an *Holy Warre*, and a Generall Expedition of *Chriſtian Princes* againſt the *Turke*. Wherein it was agreed, and thought fit, that the *Hungarians*, *Polonians*, and *Bohemians* ſhould make a *Warre* vpon *Thracia*; The *French*, and *Spaniards* vpon *Grecia*; And that the *Pope* (willing to ſacrifice himſelfe in ſo good a Cauſe) in Perſon and in Companie of the King of *England*, the *Venetians*, and ſuch other *States* as were great in maritime

ritime Power, would saile with a puissant *Nauie* through the *Mediterrane* vnto *Constantinople*. And that to this end, his *Holinesse* had sent *Nuncio's* to all *Christian Princes;* As well for a *Cessation* of all Quarrels and Differences amongst themselues, as for speedie *Preparations* and *Contributions* of *Forces* and *Treasure* for this *Sacred Enterprize*.

To this the King, (who vnderstood well the Court of *Rome*) made an *Answere* rather *Solemne*, then *Serious*. Signifying,

THat no Prince *on Earth (should bee more forward and obedient, both by his* Person, *and by all his possible* Forces, *and* Fortunes, *to enter into this sacred* Warre, *then himselfe. But that the distance of Place was such, as no* Forces *that hee should raise for the Seas, could be leuied or prepared, but with double the charge, and double the time (at the least) that they might bee from the other* Princes, *that had their* Territories *nearer adioyning. Besides, that neither the manner of his Ships (hauing no Gallies) nor the Experience of his* Pilots *and* Mariners *could bee so apt for those Seas, as theirs. And therefore that his* Holinesse *might doe well, to mooue one of those other Kings, who lay fitter for the purpose, to accompanie him by Sea. Whereby both all things would bee sooner put in readinesse, and with lesse Charge, and the* Emulation *and* Diuision *of* Command, *which*

might growe betweene thoſe Kings of France *and* Spaine, *if they ſhould both ioyne in the* Warre *by Land vpon* Grecia, *might bee wiſely auoided. And that for his part, hee would not bee wanting in* Aides *and* Contribution. *Yet notwithſtanding, if both theſe Kings ſhould refuſe, rather then his* Holineſſe *ſhould goe alone, hee would waite vpon him, as ſoone as hee could bee readie. Alwaies prouided, that hee might firſt ſee all* Differences *of the* Chriſtian Princes *amongſt themſelues, fully laide downe and appeaſed (as for his owne part hee was in none.) And that hee might haue ſome good Townes vpon the Coaſt in* Italie *put into his hands, for the Retrait and ſafeguard of his Men.*

With this *Anſwere* IASPER PONS returned, nothing at all diſcontented. And yet this *Declaration* of the King (as ſuperficiall as it was) gaue him that *Reputation* abroad, as hee was not long after elected by the *Knights* of the *Rhodes*, *Protector* of their *Order*; All things multiplying to *Honour* in a *Prince*, that had gotten ſuch high Eſtimation for his *Wiſedome* and *Sufficiencie.*

There were theſe two laſt yeares ſome proceedings againſt *Heretiques*, which was rare in this Kings Raigne, and rather by *Penances*, then by *Fire*. The King had (though hee were no good *Schooleman*) the Honour to conuert one of them by Diſpute at *Canterburie.*

This

This yeare alſo, though the King were no more haunted with *Sprites*, for that by the *Sprinkling* partly of *Bloud*, and partly of *Water*, hee had chaſed them away; yet neuertheleſſe hee had certaine *Apparitions*, that troubled him, ſtill ſhewing themſelues from one *Region*, which was the Houſe of *Yorke*. It came ſo to paſſe, that the *Earle* of *Suffolke*, Sonne to ELIZABETH eldeſt Siſter to King EDWARD the fourth, by IOHN *Duke* of *Suffolke*, her ſecond Husband, and Brother to IOHN *Earle* of *Lincolne*, that was ſlaine at *Stoke-field*, being of an haſtie and Cholericke Diſpoſition, had killed a man in his furie; whereupon the King gaue him his *Pardon*. But either willing to leaue a *Cloud* vpon him, or the better to make him feele his *Grace*, produced him openly to plead his *Pardon*. This wrought in the *Earle*, as in a haughtie ſtomacke it vſeth to doe; for the *Ignominie* printed deeper then the *Grace*. Wherefore hee being diſcontent, fled ſecretly into *Flanders*, vnto his *Aunt* the *Ducheſſe* of *Burgundie*. The King ſtartled at it. But being taught by Troubles, to vſe fare and timely *Remedies*, wrought ſo with him by Meſſages, (The *Ladie* MARGARET alſo growing, by often failing in her *Alchymie*, wearie of her Experiments, and partly being a little ſweetned, for that the King had not touched her name in the Confeſſion of PERKIN) that hee came ouer againe vpon good termes, and was reconciled to the King.

In the beginning of the next yeare, beeing the ſeuenteenth of the King, the *Ladie* KATHARINE, fourth Daughter of FERDINANDO and ISABELLA, King and *Queene* of *Spaine*, arriued in *England*, at *Plimmouth*, the ſecond of *October*, and was married to *Prince* ARTHVR in PAVLES, the fourteenth of *Nouember* following. The *Prince* being then about fifteene yeares of age, and the *Ladie* about eighteene. The manner of her receiuing, the manner

of her Entrie into *London*, and the Celebritie of the *Marriage* were performed with great and true Magnificence, in regard of *Coſt*, *Shew*, and *Order*. The chiefe man that tooke the care was *Biſhop* Fox; who was not onely a graue *Councellor* for Warre or Peace, but alſo a good *Surueyour* of Workes, and a good *Maſter* of *Ceremonies*, and any thing elſe that was fit for the *Actiue* part, belonging to the ſeruice of *Court*, or *State* of a great King. This *Marriage* was almoſt ſeuen yeares in *Treatie*; which was in part cauſed by the tender yeares of the *Marriage-couple*, eſpecially of the *Prince*. But the true reaſon was, that theſe two *Princes* being *Princes* of great Policie and profound Iudgement, ſtood a great time looking one vpon anothers *Fortunes*, how they would goe; knowing well that in the meane time, the verie *Treatie* it ſelfe gaue abroad in the World a Reputation of a ſtraite Coniunction, and Amitie betweene them, which ſerued on both ſides to many purpoſes, that their ſeuerall Affaires required, and yet they continued ſtill free. But in the end, when the *Fortunes* of both the *Princes* did grow euerie day more and more proſperous and aſſured, and that looking all about them, they ſaw no better Conditions, they ſhut it vp.

The *Marriage* Monie the *Princeſſe* brought (which was turned ouer to the King by Act of *Renunciation*) was two hundred thouſand *Ducats*. Wherof one hundred thouſand were paiable ten dayes after the *Solemnization*, and the other hundred thouſand at two payments Annuall; but part of it to be in *Iewels* and *Plate*, and a due courſe ſet downe to haue them iuſtly and indifferently prized. The *Ioynture* or *Aduancement* of the *Lady*, was the third part of the *Principality* of *Wales*, and of the *Dukedome* of *Cornewall*, and of the *Earledome* of *Cheſter*, to be after ſet forth in ſeueraltie. And in caſe ſhee came to bee *Queene* of *England*, her *Aduance-*

uancement was left indefinite, but thus; That it ſhould bee as great, as euer any former *Queene* of *England* had.

In all the *Deuiſes* and *Conceits* of the *Triumphs* of this *Marriage*, there was a great deale of *Aſtronomie*. The *Ladie* beeing reſembled to HESPERVS, and the *Prince* to ARCTVRVS, and the old King ALPHONSVS (that was the greateſt *Aſtronomer* of Kings, and was *Anceſtor* to the *Ladie*) was brought in, to bee the *Fortune-teller* of the *Match*. And whoſoeuer had thoſe *Toyes* in Compiling, they were not altogether *Pedanticall*. But you may bee ſure that King ARTHVR, the *Britton*, and the deſcent of the *Ladie* KATHERINE from the Houſe of LANCASTER, was in no wiſe forgotten. But (as it ſhould ſeeme) it is not good to fetch *Fortunes* from the *Starres*. For this young *Prince* (that drew vpon him at that time, not onely the Hopes and Affections of his *Countrie*, but the Eyes and Expectation of *Forrainers*) after a few Moneths, in the beginning of *Aprill*, deceaſed at *Ludlow Caſtle*, where he was ſent to keepe his *Reſiance* and *Court*, as *Prince* of *Wales*. Of this *Prince*, in reſpect hee died ſo young, and by reaſon of his Fathers manner of Education, that did caſt no great *Luſtre* vpon his *Children*, there is little particular Memorie. Onely thus much remayneth, that hee was very ſtudious and learned, beyond his yeares, and beyond the Cuſtome of great *Princes*.

There was a Doubt ripped vp in the times following, when the *Diuorce* of King HENRIE the Eighth from the *Ladie* KATHERINE did ſo much buſie the world, whether ARTHVR was bedded with his *Ladie* or no, whereby that matter in fact (of *Carnall Knowledge*) might bee made part of the *Caſe*. And it is true, that the *Ladie* her ſelfe denied it, or at leaſt her *Counſell* ſtood vpon it, and would not blaunch that Ad-

Aduantage, although the *Plenitude* of the *Popes Power* of Diſpenſing was the maine Queſtion. And this Doubt was kept long open, in reſpect of the two *Queenes* that ſucceeded, MARIE and ELIZABETH, whoſe *Legitimations* were incompatible one with another, though their *Succeßion* was ſetled by *Act* of *Parliament*. And the times that fauoured *Queene* MARIES *Legitimation* would haue it belieued, that there was no *Carnall Knowledge* betweene ARTHVR and KATHERINE. Not that they would ſeeme to derogate from the *Popes* abſolute power, to diſpence euen in that *Caſe*; but onely in point of Honour, and to make the *Caſe* more fauourable and ſmooth. And the Times that fauoured *Queene* ELIZABETHS *Legitimation* (which were the longer, and the latter) maintained the contrarie. So much there remayneth in Memorie, that it was halfe a yeares time betweene the *Creation* of HENRY *Prince* of *Wales*, and *Prince* ARTHVRS death; which was conſtrued to bee, for to expect a full time, whereby it might appeare, whether the *Ladie* KATHERINE were with *Child* by *Prince* ARTHVR, or no. Againe, the *Ladie* her ſelfe procured a *Bull*, for the better Corroboration of the *Marriage*, with a Clauſe of (*vel forſan cognitam*) which was not in the firſt *Bull*. There was giuen in Euidence alſo, when the Cauſe of the *Diuorce* was handled, a pleaſant paſſage, which was; That in a Morning *Prince* ARTHVR, vpon his vp-riſing from Bed with her, called for drinke, which hee was not accuſtomed to doe, and finding the *Gentleman* of his Chamber that brought him the drinke to ſmile at it, and to note it, hee ſaid merrily to him; That hee had beene in the middeſt of *Spaine*, which was an hot *Region*, and his Iourney had made him drie, and that if the other had beene in ſo hot a *Clime*, hee would hauebeene drier then hee. Beſides, the *Prince* was

vpon

vpon the point of Sixteene yeares of Age when hee died, and forward, and able in Bodie.

The *February* following, HENRY *Duke* of *Yorke* was created *Prince* of *Wales*, and *Earle* of *Cheſter* and *Flint*. For the *Dukedome* of *Cornewall* deuolued to him by *Statute*. The King alſo beeing faſt handed, and loth to part with a ſecond *Dowrie*, but chiefly being affectionate both by his Nature, and out of Politicke Conſiderations to continue the Alliance with *Spaine*, preuailed with the *Prince* (though not without ſome Reluctation, ſuch as could bee in thoſe yeares, for hee was not twelue yeares of *Age*) to bee contracted with the *Princeſſe* KATHERINE. The ſecret *Prouidence* of GOD ordaining that *Marriage*, to bee the Occaſion of great Euents and Changes.

The ſame yeare were the *Eſpouſals* of IAMES King of *Scotland*, with the *Ladie* MARGARET, the Kings eldeſt Daughter; which was done by *Proxie*, and publiſhed at PAVLES-*Croſſe*, the fiue and twentieth of *Ianuary*, and *Te Deum* ſolemnly ſung. But certaine it is, that the *Ioy* of the *Citie* thereupon ſhewed, by Ringing of *Bells*, and *Bon-fires*, and ſuch other *Incenſe* of the People, was more then could be expected, in a Caſe of ſo great and freſh Enmitie betweene the *Nations*; eſpecially in *London*, which was farre enough of from feeling any of the former calamities of the *Warre*. And therefore might be truely attributed to a *Secret Inſtinct* and *Inſpiring* (which many times runneth not onely in the *Hearts* of *Princes*, but in the *Pulſe* and *Veines* of People) touching the happineſſe thereby to enſue in time to come. This *Marriage* was in *Auguſt* following conſummate at *Edenborough*. The King bringing his Daughter as farre as *Colli-Weſton* on the way, and then conſigning her to the Attendance of the *Earle* of *Northumberland*; Who with a great

a great Troupe of *Lords* and *Ladies* of *Honour*, brought her into *Scotland*, to the *King* her Husband.

This *Marriage* had beene in *Treatie* by the ſpace of almoſt three yeares, from the time that the King of *Scotland* did firſt open his mind to *Biſhop* FOX. The Summe giuen in *Marriage* by the King, was ten thouſand pounds. And the *Iointure* and *Aduancement* aſſured by the King of *Scotland*, was two Thouſand pounds a yeare, after King IAMES his Death, and one Thouſand pounds a yeare in preſent, for the *Ladies* Allowance or Maintenance. This to be ſet forth in *Lands*, of the beſt and moſt certaine Reuenue. During the *Treatie*, it is reported, that the King remitted the matter to his *Counſell*; And that ſome of the *Table* in the Freedome of *Counſellors* (the King beeing preſent) did put the *Caſe*; that if GOD ſhould take the Kings two *Sonnes* without *Iſſue*, that then the Kingdome of *England* would fall to the King of *Scotland*, which might preiudice the *Monarchie* of *England*. Whereunto the King himſelfe replyed; That if that ſhould bee, *Scotland* would bee but an *Acceſſion* to *England*, and not *England* to *Scotland*, for that the *Greater* would draw the leſſe. And that it was a ſafer *Vnion* for *England*, then that of *France*. This paſſed as an *Oracle*, and ſilenced thoſe that mooued the *Queſtion*.

The ſame yeare was fatall, aſwell for *Deathes*, as *Marriages*, and that with equall temper. For the *Ioyes* and *Feaſts* of the two *Marriages*, were compenſed with the *Mournings*, and *Funerals* of *Prince* ARTHVR (of whom wee haue ſpoken) and of *Queene* ELIZABETH, who dyed in Child-bed in the *Tower*, and the *Child* liued not long after. There dyed alſo that yeare *Sir* REGINOLD BRAY, who was noted to haue had with the King the greateſt *Freedome* of any *Counſellor*; but it was but a *Freedome*, the better to ſet of *Flattery*.

Flatterie. Yet hee bare more then his iuſt part of *Enuie*, for the *Exactions*.

At this time the Kings Eſtate was very proſperous, Secured by the Amitie of *Scotland*, ſtrengthened by that of *Spaine*, cheriſhed by that of *Burgundie*, all Domeſticke Troubles quenched, and all Noyſe of *Warre* (like a *Thunder* a farre of) going vpon *Italie*. Wherefore *Nature*, which many times is happily contayned, and refrained by ſome Bands of *Fortune*, beganne to take place in the King; carrying (as with a ſtrong *Tide*) his Affections and Thoughts vnto the gathering and heaping vp of *Treaſure*. And as Kings doe more eaſily find Inſtruments for their *Will* and *Humour*, then for their *Seruice* and *Honour*; He had gotten for his purpoſe, or beyond his purpoſe, two Inſtruments, EMPSON and DVDLEY, (whom the people eſteemed as his *Horſe-Leeches* and *Shearers*) bold men, and careleſſe of *Fame*, and that tooke *Toll* of their Maſters *Griſt*. DVDLEY was of a good Family, Eloquent, and one that could put *hatefull Buſineſſe* into *good Language*. But EMPSON, that was the Sonne of a *Siue-maker*, triumphed alwayes vpon the *Deede done*, putting of all other reſpects whatſoeuer. Theſe two Perſons beeing *Lawyers* in *Science*, and *Priuie Counſellors* in *Authoritie*, (as *the Corruption of the beſt things is the worſt*) turned *Law* and *Iuſtice* into *Woorme-wood* and *Rapine*. For firſt, their manner was to cauſe diuers *Subiects* to bee indicted of ſundrie Crimes, and ſo farre forth to proceed in forme of *Law*; But when the *Bils* were found, then preſently to commit them. And neuertheleſſe not to produce them to any reaſonable time to their *Anſwere*, but to ſuffer them to languiſh long in *Priſon*, and by ſundrie artificiall *Deuices* and *Terrours*, to extort from them great *Fines* and *Ranſomes*, which they termed *Compoſitions* and *Mitigations*.

Neither did they (towards the end) obſerue ſo much as the *Halfe-face* of *Iuſtice*, in proceeding by *Indictment*; but ſent forth their *Precepts* to attache men, and conuent them before themſelues, & ſome others, at their priuate Houſes, in a *Court* of *Commiſsion*, and there vſed to ſhuffle vp a *Summarie Proceeding* by *Examination*, without Tryall of *Iurie*; aſſuming to themſelues there, to deale both in *Pleas* of the *Crowne*, and *Controuerſies Ciuill*.

Then did they alſo vſe to enthrall and charge the *Subiects* Lands with *Tenures in Capite*, by finding *Falſe Offices*, and thereby to worke vpon them for *Wardſhips*, *Liueries*, *Primier Seiſines*, and *Alienations*, (being the fruites of thoſe *Tenures*) refuſing vpon diuers Pretexts and Delayes, to admit men to trauerſe thoſe *Falſe Offices*, according to the *Law*. Nay, the *Kings Wards* after they had accompliſhed their full Age, could not bee ſuffered to haue *Liuerie* of their *Lands*, without paying exceſſiue *Fines*, farre exceeding all reaſonable Rates. They did alſo vexe men with *Informations* of *Intruſion* vpon ſcarce colourable *Titles*.

VVhen men were *Out-lawed* in *Perſonall Actions*, they would not permit them to purchaſe their *Charters* of *Pardon*, except they paid great and intollerable ſummes; ſtanding vpon the ſtrict Point of *Law*, which vpon *Out-lawries* giueth *Forfeiture* of *Goods*. Nay, contrarie to all *Law* and Colour, they maintained the King ought to haue the halfe of mens *Lands* and *Rents*, during the ſpace of full two yeares, for a *Paine* in *Caſe* of *Out-lawrie*. They would alſo ruffle with *Iurors*, and inforce them to finde as they would direct, and (if they did not) Conuent them, Impriſon them, and Fine them.

Theſe and many other Courſes, fitter to be buried then repeated, they had of *praying* vpon the *People*; both like *Tame Hawkes* for their Maſter, and like *Wild Hawkes*

Hawkes for themſelues; in ſo much as they grew to great Riches and Subſtance. But their principall working was vpon *Penall Lawes*, wherein they ſpared none, great nor ſmall; nor conſidered whether the *Law* were poſſible, or impoſſible, in *Vſe*, or *Obſolete*. But raked ouer all old and new *Statutes*, though many of them were made with intention rather of *Terrour*, then of *Rigour*; hauing euer a Rabble of *Promoters*, *Queſtmongers*, and *Leading Iurors* at their Command, ſo as they could haue any thing found either for *Fact*, or *Valuation*.

There remayneth to this Day a *Report*, that the King was on a time entertayned by the *Earle* of *Oxford*, (that was his principall *Seruant*, both for *Warre* and *Peace*) nobly and ſumptuouſly, at his *Caſtle* at *Henningham*. And at the Kings going away, the *Earles* Seruants ſtood (in a ſeemely manner) in their *Liuerie Coates*, with *Cogniſances*, ranged on both ſides, and made the King a *Lane*. The King called the *Earle* to him, and ſaid; *My Lord, I haue heard much of your Hoſpitalitie, but I ſee it is greater then the ſpeach. Theſe handſome Gentlemen and Yeomen, which I ſee on both ſides of me, are ſure your Meniall Seruants.* The *Earle* ſmiled, and ſaid; *It may pleaſe your Grace, that were not for mine eaſe. They are moſt of them my Retayners, that are come to doe mee ſeruice at ſuch a time as this, and chiefly to ſee your Grace.* The King ſtarted a little, and ſaid; *By my faith (my Lord) I thanke you for my good Cheare, but I may not endure to haue my Lawes broken in my ſight. My Atturney muſt ſpeake with you.* And it is part of the *Report*, that the *Earle* compounded for no leſſe then fifteene thouſand Marks. And to ſhew further the Kings extreme Diligence; I doe remember to haue ſeene long ſince a Booke of Accompt of EMPSONS, that had the Kings hand almoſt to euery Leafe, by way of *Signing*, and was in ſome places *Poſtilled* in the

Margent with the Kings hand likewiſe, where was this *Remembrance.*

> Item, *receiued of ſuch a one, fiue Markes, for the Pardon to be procured; and if the Pardon doe not paſſe, the Monie to be repaied; Except the Partie bee ſome other-wayes ſatisfied.*

And ouer againſt this *Memorandum* (of the Kings owne hand)

Otherwiſe ſatisfied.

Which I doe the rather mention, becauſe it ſhewes in the King a *Neareneſſe*, but yet with a kind of *Iuſtneſſe.* So theſe little *Sands* and *Graines* of *Gold* and *Siluer* (as it ſeemeth) helped not a little to make vp the great *Heape* and *Banke.*

But meane while (to keepe the King awake) the *Earle* of *Suffolke* hauing beene too gay at *Prince* ARTHVRS *Marriage*, and ſunke himſelfe deepe in Debt, had yet once more a mind to be a *Knight-Errant*, and to ſeeke *Aduentures* in Forraine parts; And taking his Brother with him, fled againe into *Flanders.* That (no doubt) which gaue him Confidence, was the great *Murmur* of the *People* againſt the *Kings Gouernement.* And being a *Man* of a light and raſh *Spirit*, hee thought euery *Vapour* would bee a *Tempeſt.* Neither wanted hee ſome Partie within the *Kingdome.* For the *Murmur* of *People* awakes the *Diſcontents* of *Nobles*; and againe, that calleth vp commonly ſome *Head* of *Sedition.* The King reſorting to his wonted and tried Arts, cauſed Sir ROBERT CVRSON, *Captaine* of the *Caſtle* at *Hammes* (being at that time beyond Sea, and therefore leſſe likely to be wrought vpon by the King) to flie from his *Charge*, and to faine himſelfe a ſeruant of the

the *Earles*. This *Knight*, hauing inſinuated himſelfe into the Secrets of the *Earle*, and finding by him vpon whom chiefly hee had either *Hope* or *Hold*, aduertiſed the King thereof in great ſecrecie. But neuertheleſſe maintained his owne Credit and inward truſt with the *Earle*. Vpon whoſe Aduertiſements, the King attached WILLIAM COVRTNEY, *Earle* of *Deuonſhire*, his *Bother-in-Lawe*, married to the *Ladie* KATHERINE, daughter to King EDWARD the Fourth; WILLIAM DE-LA-POLE, Brother to the *Earle* of *Suffolke*; Sir IAMES TIRREL, and Sir IOHN WINDHAM, and ſome other meaner Perſons, and committed them to Cuſtodie. GEORGE, Lord ABERGAVENNIE, and Sir THOMAS GREENE, were at the ſame time apprehended; but as vpon leſſe Suſpition, ſo in a freer Reſtraint, and were ſoone after deliuered. The *Earle* of *Deuonſhire*, being intereſſed in the bloud of *Yorke*, that was rather *Feared* then *Nocent*; yet as *One*, that might bee the *Obiect* of others *Plots* and *Deſignes*, remained Priſoner in the *Tower*, during the Kings life. WILLIAM DE-LA-POLE, was alſo long reſtrained, though not ſo ſtraitly. But for Sir IAMES TIRREL (againſt whom the *Bloud* of the *Innocent Princes*, EDWARD the Fifth, and his Brother, did ſtill crie from vnder the *Altar*) and Sir IOHN WINDHAM, and the other meaner ones, they were attainted and executed; The two *Knights* beheaded. Neuertheleſſe, to confirme the Credit of CVRSON (who belike had not yet done all his *Feates* of *Actiuitie*) there was publiſhed at PAVLES *Croſſe*, about the time of the ſaid Executions, the *Popes Bull* of *Excommunication* and *Curſe*, againſt the *Earle* of *Suffolke*, and Sir ROBERT CVRSON, & ſome others by name, and likewiſe in generall againſt all the *Abettors* of the ſaid *Earle*. Wherein it muſt bee confeſſed, that *Heauen* was made too much to bow to *Earth*, and *Religion*

1504 32.

ligion to *Policie*. But ſoone after, CVRSON (when hee ſaw time) returned into *England*, and withall into wonted *Fauour* with the King, but worſe *Fame* with the *People*. Vpon whoſe returne the *Earle* was much diſmayed, and ſeeing himſelfe deſtitute of hopes (the *Ladie* MARGARET alſo by tract of *Time*, and bad *Succeſſe*, being now become coole in thoſe Attempts) after ſome wandering in *France*, and *Germanie*, and certaine little *Proiects*, no better then *Squibbs* of an *Exiled-man*, being tired out, retired againe into the Protection of the *Arch-Duke* PHILIP in *Flanders*, who by the death of ISABELLA was at that time King of *Caſtile*, in the right of IOAN his Wife.

This yeare (beeing the Nineteenth of his Raigne) the King called his *Parliament*. Wherein a man may eaſily gueſſe, how abſolute the King tooke himſelfe to bee with his *Parliament*, when DVDLEY that was ſo hatefull, was made *Speaker* of the *Houſe* of *Commons*. In this *Parliament*, there were not made any *Statutes* memorable, touching publike *Gouernement*. But thoſe that were, had ſtill the *Stampe* of the Kings *Wiſedome* and *Policie*.

There was a *Statute* made for the diſanulling of all *Patents* of *Leaſe*, or *Grant*, to ſuch as came not vpon lawfull *Summons* to ſerue the King in his *Warres*, againſt the *Enemies* or *Rebels*, or that ſhould depart without the Kings licenſe; With an Exception of certaine Perſons of the *Long-robe*. Prouiding neuertheleſſe, That they ſhould haue the Kings Wages, from their *Houſe*, till their *Returne* home againe. There had beene the like made before for *Offices*, and by this *Statute* it was extended to *Lands*. But a man may eaſily ſee by many *Statutes* made in this Kings time, that the King thought it ſafeſt, to aſſiſt *Martiall Law*, by *Law* of *Parliament*.

Another *Statute* was made, prohibiting the bring-

ing

ing in of *Manufactures* of *Silke* wrought by it ſelfe, or mixt with any other *Thred*. But it was not of *Stuffes* of whole piece (for that the Realme had of them no *Manufacture* in vſe at that time) but of *Knit-Silke*, or *Texture* of *Silke*; as *Ribbands*, *Laces*, *Caules*, *Points*, and *Girdles*, &c. which the People of *England* could then well skill to make. This *Law* pointed at a true *Principle*; *That where forraine materials are but Superfluities, forraine Manufactures ſhould bee probibited.* For that will either baniſh the *Superfluitie*, or gaine the *Manufacture*.

There was a *Law* alſo of *Reſumption* of *Patents* of *Gaoles*, and the *Reannexing* of them to the *Sherifwicks*; *Priuiledged Officers* beeing no leſſe an Interruption of *Iuſtice*, then *Priuiledged Places*.

There was likewiſe a *Law* to reſtraine the *By-lawes* or Ordinances of *Corporations*, which many times were againſt the *Prerogatiue* of the King, the *Common-law* of the *Realme*, and the *Libertie* of the *Subiect*, beeing *Fraternities* in Euill. It was therefore *Prouided*, that they ſhould not bee put in Execution, without the Allowance of the *Chancellor*, *Treaſurer*, and the two *Chiefe-Iuſtices*, or three of them, or of the two *Iuſtices* of *Circuit* where the *Corporation* was.

Another *Law* was (in effect) to bring in the *Siluer* of the *Realme* to the *Mint*, in making all clipped, miniſhed, or impaired *Coines* of *Siluer*, not to bee currant in payments; without giuing any Remedie of weight, but with an exception onely of reaſonable wearing, which was as nothing in reſpect of the incertaintie; and ſo (vpon the matter) to ſet the *Mint* on worke, and to giue way to *New Coines* of *Siluer*, which ſhould bee then minted.

There likewiſe was a long *Statute* againſt *Vagabonds*, wherein two things may bee noted; The one, the *Diſlike* the *Parliament* had of *Gaoling* of them, as that

that which was chargeable, peſterous, and of no open Example. The other, That in the *Statutes* of this Kings time, (for this of the Nineteenth yeare is not the onely *Statute* of that kind) there are euer coupled, the *Puniſhment* of *Vacabonds*, and the *Forbidding* of *Dice*, and *Cards*, and vnlawfull *Games* vnto Seruants and meane people, and the putting downe and ſuppreſſing of *Ale-houſes*, as *Strings* of one *Roote* together, and as if the One were vnprofitable, without the Other.

As for *Riot* and *Retainers*, there paſſed ſcarce any *Parliament* in this time without a *Law* againſt them; The King euer hauing an Eye to *Might*, and *Multitude*.

There was granted alſo that *Parliament* a *Subſidie*, both for the *Temporaltie* and the *Clergie*. And yet neuertheleſſe, ere the yeare expired, there went out *Commiſsions* for a generall *Beneuolence*, though there were no *Warres*; no *Feares*. The ſame yeare the *Citie* gaue fiue thouſand Markes, for *Confirmation* of their *Liberties*; A thing fitter for the *Beginnings* of Kings Raignes, then the latter Ends. Neither was it a ſmall matter, that the *Mint* gained vpon the late *Statute*, by the *Recoinage* of *Groats* and *Halfe-groats*, now *Twelue-pences* and *Six-pences*. As for EMPSON and DVDLEY'S *Mills*, they did grinde more then euer. So that it was a ſtrange thing, to ſee what *Golden Showres* powred downe vpon the Kings *Treaſurie* at once. The laſt payments of the *Marriage-money* from *Spaine*; The *Subſidie*; The *Beneuolence*; The *Recoinage*; The *Redemption* of the *Cities Liberties*; The *Caſualties*. And this is the more to bee marueiled at, becauſe the King had then no Occaſions at all of *Warres* or *Troubles*. Hee had now but one *Sonne*, and one *Daughter* vnbeſtowed. Hee was *Wiſe*; Hee was of an *High Mind*; Hee needed not to make *Riches* his *Glorie*. Hee did

did excell in ſo many things elſe; ſaue that certainly *Auarice* doth euer finde in it ſelfe matter of *Ambition*. Belike hee thought to leaue his *Sonne* ſuch a *Kingdome*, and ſuch a *Maſſe* of *Treaſure*, as hee might chooſe his *Greatneſſe* where he would.

This yeare was alſo kept the *Seriants Feaſt*, which was the ſecond *Call* in this Kings *Dayes*.

About this time ISABELLA, *Queene* of *Caſtile* deceaſed; a right Noble *Ladie*, and an Honour to her *Sexe*, and Times, and the *Corner-ſtone* of the *Greatneſſe* of *Spaine*, that hath followed. This Accident the King tooke not for *Newes* at large, but thought it had a great *Relation* to his owne *Affaires*; eſpecially in two points. The One, for *Example*; the Other for *Conſequence*. Firſt, he conceiued that the *Caſe* of FERDINANDO of *Arragon* after the death of *Queene* ISABELLA was his owne *Caſe*, after the death of his owne *Queene*: and the *Caſe* of IOAN the *Heire* vnto *Caſtile*, was the *Caſe* of his owne Sonne *Prince* HENRY. For if both of the Kiugs had their *Kingdomes* in the right of their *Wiues*, they deſcended to the *Heires*, and did not accrew to the *Husbands*. And although his owne *Caſe* had both *Steele* and *Parchment*, more then the other (that is to ſay, a *Conqueſt* in the *Field*, and an *Act* of *Parliament*) yet notwithſtanding, that Naturall *Title* of Deſcent in *Bloud*, did (in the imagination euen of a Wiſe-man) breed a *Doubt*, that the other two were not ſafe nor ſufficient. Wherefore he was wonderfull diligent, to inquire and obſerue what became of the King of *Arragon*, in holding and continuing the *Kingdome* of *Caſtile*. And whether he did hold it in his owne *Right*, or as *Adminiſtrator* to his *Daughter*; And whether he were like to hold it in *Facti*, or to bee put out by his *Sonne-in-Law*. Secondly, hee did reuolue in his minde, that the State of *Chriſtendome* might by this late Accident haue a turne. For whereas before time Himſelfe, with

the Coniunction of *Arragon* and *Caſtile* (which then was one) and the Amitie of MAXIMILIAN and PHILIP his Sonne the *Arch-Duke*, was farre too ſtrong a *Partie* for *France;* hee beganne to feare, that now the *French* King (who had great *Intereſt* in the Affections of PHILIP the young King of *Caſtile*) and PHILIP himſelfe, now King of *Caſtile*, (who was in ill Termes with his *Father-in-law* about the preſent Gouernment of *Caſtile*) And thirdly, MAXIMILIAN, PHILIPS *Father* (who was euer variable, and vpon whom the ſureſt Aime that could be taken, was that hee would not be long, as hee had beene laſt before) would, all three being potent *Princes*, enter into ſome ſtrait *League* and *Confederation* amongſt themſelues. Whereby though hee ſhould not be endangered, yet hee ſhould be left to the poore Amitie of *Arragon*. And whereas hee had beene heretofore a kind of *Arbiter* of *Europe*, he ſhould now goe leſſe, and be ouer-topped by ſo great a *Coniunction*. Hee had alſo (as it ſeemes) an inclination to marrie, and bethought himſefe of ſome fit Conditions abroad. And amongſt others, he had heard of the *Beautie* and vertuous *Behauiour* of the young *Queene* of *Naples*, the Widdow of FERDINANDO the younger, being then of *Matronall* yeares of ſeuen and twentie. By whoſe *Marriage* he thought that the Kingdome of *Naples* (hauing beene a *Gole* for a time betweene the King of *Arragon*, and the *French King*, and being but newly ſetled) might in ſome part be *depoſited* in his hands, who was ſo able to keepe the *Stakes*. Therefore hee ſent in *Ambaſſage* or *Meſſage* three Confident Perſons; FRANCIS MARSIN, IAMES BRAY-BROOKE, and IOHN STILE, vpon two ſeuerall *Inquiſitions*, rather then *Negotiations*. The One, touching the Perſon and Condition of the young Queene of *Naples*. The Other touching all particulars of *Eſtate*, that concerned the

the *Fortunes* and *Intenſions* of FERDINANDO. And becauſe they may obſerue beſt, who themſelues are obſerued leaſt, he ſent them vnder *Colourable Pretexts;* giuing them Letters of Kindneſſe and Complement from KATHERINE the *Princeſſe*, to her Aunt, and Neece, the Olde and Young Queene of *Naples*, and deliuering to them alſo a *Booke* of new *Articles* of *Peace*; which notwithſtanding it had beene deliuered vnto *Doctor de* PVEBLA, the *Leigier Ambaſſadour* of *Spaine* here in *England* to be ſent; yet for that the King had beene long without hearing from *Spaine*, hee thought good thoſe *Meſſengers*, when they had beene with the two Queenes, ſhould likewiſe paſſe on to the *Court* of FERDINANDO, and take a Copie of the *Booke* with them. The *Inſtructions* touching the Queene of *Naples* were ſo curious and exquiſite, being as *Articles* whereby to direct a *Suruey*, or framing a *Particular* of her *Perſon*, for Complexion, Fauour, Feature, Stature, Health, Age, Cuſtomes, Behauiour, Conditions, and Eſtate, as if the King had beene young, a Man would haue iudged him to bee *Amorous*; but being ancient, it ought to be interpreted, that ſure he was verie *Chaſte*, for that hee meant to finde all things in one Woman, and ſo to ſettle his *Affections*, without ranging. But in this *Match* hee was ſoone cooled, when he heard from his *Ambaſſadors*, that this young Queene had had a goodly *Ioynture* in the Realme of *Naples*, well anſwered during the time of her Vncle FREDERICKE, yea, and during the time of LEWIS the *French King*, in whoſe *Diuiſion* her Reuenue fell; But ſince the time that the Kingdome was in FERDINANDO's hands, all was aſſigned to the *Armie*, and *Garriſons* there, and Shee receiued only a *Penſion* or *Exhibition* out of his Cofers.

The other part of the *Inquirie* had a graue and diligent

ligent Returne, informing the King at full of the preſent State of King FERDINANDO. By this report it appeared to the King, that FERDINANDO did continue the Gouernment of *Caſtile* as *Adminiſtratour* vnto his Daughter IOAN, by the Title of Queene ISABELLA'S *Will*, and partly by the Cuſtome of the *Kingdome*, as he pretended. And that all *Mandates* and *Grants* were expedited in the name of IOAN his Daughter, and himſelfe as *Adminiſtrator*, without mention of PHILIP, her Husband. And that King FERDINANDO, howſoeuer hee did diſmiſſe himſelfe of the Name of King of *Caſtile*, yet meant to hold the *Kingdome*, without Accompt, and in abſolute Command.

It appeareth alſo, that hee flattered himſelfe with hopes, that King PHILIP would permit vnto him the Gouernement of *Caſtile* during his life; which hee had layed his plot to worke him vnto, both by ſome *Councellors* of his about him, which FERDINANDO had at his deuotion, and chiefly by Promiſe, that in caſe PHILIP gaue not way vnto it, hee would marrie ſome young *Ladie*, whereby to put him by the *Succeßion* of *Arragon* and *Granada*, in caſe hee ſhould haue a Sonne. And laſtly, by repreſenting vnto him that the Gouernement of the *Burgundians*, till PHILIP were by continuance in *Spaine* made as Naturall of *Spaine*, would not bee indured by the *Spaniards*. But in all thoſe things (though wiſely layed downe and conſidered) FERDINANDO failed; But that PLVTO was better to him, then PALLAS.

In the ſame Report alſo, the *Ambaſſadours* beeing meane men, and therefore the more free, did ſtrike vpon a String which was ſomewhat dangerous. For they declared plainely, that the People of *Spaine*, both *Nobles* and *Commons*, were better affected vnto the part of PHILIP (ſo hee brought his wife with him) then

then to FERDINANDO; And expreſſed the reaſon to bee, becauſe hee had impoſed vpon them many *Taxes*, and *Tallages*, which was the Kings owne Caſe betweene him and his Sonne.

There was alſo in this Report a Declaration of an *Ouerture* of *Marriage*, which AMASON the *Secretarie* of FERDINANDO had made vnto the *Ambaſſadours* in great ſecret, betweene CHARLES *Prince* of *Caſtile*, and MARIE the Kings ſecond Daughter; aſſuring the King, that the *Treatie* of *Marriage* then on foot, for the ſaid *Prince* and the *Daughter* of *France*, would breake; and that ſhee the ſaid Daughter of *France* ſhould bee married to ANGOLESME, that was the *Heire apparant* of *France*.

There was a touch alſo of a ſpeach of *Marriage* betweene FERDINANDO and *Madame de* FOIS, a *Ladie* of the *Blond* of *France*, which afterwards indeed ſucceeded. But this was reported as learned in *France*, and ſilenced in *Spaine*.

The King by the returne of this *Ambaſſage*, which gaue great light vnto his *Affaires*, was well inſtructed, and prepared how to carrie himſelfe betweene FERDINANDO King of *Arragon*, and PHILIP his *Sonne-in-law*, King of *Caſtile*; reſoluing with himſelfe, to doe all that in him lay to keepe them at one within themſelues; But howſoeuer that ſucceeded, by a moderate Carriage and bearing the Perſon of a *Common-friend*, to looſe neither of their Friendſhips; but yet to runne a *Courſe* more *entire* with the King of *Arragon*, but more *laboured* and *officious* with the King of *Caſtile*. But hee was much taken with the Ouerture of *Marriage* with his Daughter MARIE; Both becauſe it was the greateſt *Marriage* of *Chriſtendome*, and for that it tooke hold of both *Allies*.

But to corroborate his *Alliance* with PHILIP, the Windes gaue him an Enter-view. For PHILIP choo-

chooſing the *Winter-Seaſon*, the better to ſurpriſe the King of *Arragon*, ſet foorth with a great Nauie out of *Flanders* for *Spaine*, in the Moneth of *Ianuarie*, the one and Twentieth yeare of the Kings Raigne. But himſelfe was ſurpriſed with a cruell *Tempeſt*, that ſcattered his Ships vpon the ſeuerall Coaſts of *England*. And the Ship wherein the *King* and *Queene* were (with two other ſmall *Barkes* onely) torne, and in great perill to eſcape the Furie of the weather, thruſt into *Waymouth*. King PHILIP himſelfe, hauing not beene vſed (as it ſeemes) to Sea, all wearied and extreame ſicke, would needes land to refreſh his Spirits, though it was againſt the Opinion of his *Counſell*, doubting it might breed *Delaie*, his Occaſions requiring *Celeritie*.

The Rumour of the Arriuall of a puiſſant *Nauie* vpon the Coaſt, made the Countrie Arme. And Sir THOMAS TRENCHARD with Forces ſuddenly raiſed, not knowing what the matter might bee, came to *Waymouth*. Where vnderſtanding the Accident, hee did in all Humbleneſſe and Humanitie inuite the *King* and *Queene* to his Houſe; and foorthwith diſpatched *Poſts* to the *Court*. Soone after came Sir IOHN CAROE likewiſe, with a great troupe of Men well armed; vſing the like Humbleneſſe and Reſpects towards the King, when hee knew the Caſe. King PHILIP doubting that they, being but *Subiects*, durſt not let him paſſe away againe, without the Kings Notice and Leaue, yeilded to their Entreaties to ſtaie, till they heard from the *Court*. The King aſſoone as hee heard the *Newes*, commanded preſently the *Earle* of *Arundell*, to goe to viſite the King of *Caſtile*, and let him vnderſtand; That as hee was verie ſorrie for his Miſhap, ſo hee was glad that hee had eſcaped the Danger of the Seas, and likewiſe of the Occaſion himſelfe had to doe him Honour; and deſiring

deſiring him, to thinke himſelfe as in his owne Land; and that the King made all haſt poſſible to come and imbrace him. The *Earle* came to him in great Magnificence, with a braue *Troupe* of three hundred *Horſe*; and (for more *State*) came by *Torch-Light*. After hee had done the Kings Meſſage, King PHILIP ſeeing how the world went, the ſooner to get away, went vpon ſpeed to the King at *Windſore*, and his Queene followed by eaſie iourneyes. The two Kings at their meeting vſed all the *Careſſes*, and louing Demonſtrations, that were poſſible. And the King of *Caſtile* ſaid pleaſantly to the King; *That hee was now puniſhed, for that hee would not come within his walled Towne of* Calice, *when they met laſt.* But the King anſwered; *That Walles and Seas were nothing, where Hearts were open; and that hee was heere no otherwiſe, but to bee ſerued.* After a Day or two's refreſhing, the Kings entred into ſpeach of renewing the *Treatie*; The King ſaying, That though King PHILIPS Perſon were the ſame, yet his *Fortunes* and *State* were raiſed. In which Caſe a Renouation of *Treatie* was vſed amongſt *Princes*. But while theſe things were in handling, the King chooſing a fit time, and drawing the King of *Caſtile* into a Roome, where they two onely were priuate, and laying his hand ciuilly vpon his arme, and changing his Countenance a little from a Countenance of *Intertainment*, ſaid to him; *Sir, you haue beene ſaued vpon my Coaſt, I hope you will not ſuffer mee to wracke vpon yours.* The *King* of *Caſtile* asked him, *what hee meant by that ſpeach? I meane it* (ſaith the King) *by that ſame Harebraine wild Fellow, my ſubiect, the* Earle *of* Suffolke, *who is protected in your Countrie, and begins to play the Foole, when all others are wearie of it.* The *King* of *Caſtile* anſwered; *I had thought (Sir) your Felicitie had beene aboue thoſe thoughts. But if it trouble you, I will baniſh him.* The King replied; *Thoſe Hornets*

Hornets were beſt in their Neſt, and worſt then when they did flie abroad, and that his deſire was, to haue him deliuered to him. The King of *Caſtile* herewith a little confuſed, and in a ſtudie, ſaid; *That can I not doe with my honour, and leſſe with yours; for you will bee thought to haue vſed mee as a Priſoner.* The King preſently ſaid; *Then the matter is at an end. For I will take that diſhonour vpon mee, and ſo your honour is ſaued.* The King of *Caſtile*, who had the King in great Eſtimation, and beſides remembred where hee was, and knew not what vſe hee might haue of the Kings Amitie, for that himſelfe was new in his Eſtate of *Spaine*, and vnſetled both with his *Father-in-Law*, and with his *People*, compoſing his Countenance, ſaid; *Sir, you giue Law to mee; but ſo will I to you. You ſhall haue him, but (vpon your honour) you ſhall not take his Life.* The King embracing him, ſaid; *Agreed.* Saith the King of *Caſtile*; *Neither ſhall it diſlike you, if I ſend to him in ſuch a faſhion, as hee may partly come with his owne good will.* The King ſaid; *It was well thought of; and if it pleaſed him, hee would ioyne with him, in ſending to the* Earle *a Meſſage to that purpoſe.* They both ſent ſeuerally, and meane while they continued *Feaſting* and *Paſtimes.* The King being (on his part) willing to haue the *Earle* ſure before the King of *Caſtile* went; and the King of *Caſtile* being as willing to ſeeme to bee inforced. The King alſo with many wiſe and excellent Perſwaſions, did aduiſe the King of *Caſtile*, to bee ruled by the *Counſell* of his *Father-in-Law* FERDINANDO; a *Prince* ſo prudent, ſo experienced, ſo fortunate. The King of *Caſtile* (who was in no verie good termes with his ſaid *Father-in-Law*) anſwered; *That if his Father-in-Law would ſuffer him to gouerne his Kingdomes, hee ſhould gouerne him.*

There were immediately *Meſſengers* ſent from both Kings, to recall the *Earle* of *Suffolke*: Who vpon

vpon gentle wordes vſed to him was ſoone charmed, and willing enough to returne; aſſured of his *Life*, and hoping of his *Libertie*. Hee was brought through *Flanders* to *Calice*, and thence landed at *Douer*, and with ſufficient *Guard* deliuered and receiued at the *Tower* of *London*. Meane while King HENRY (to draw out the time) continued his *Feaſtings* and *Entertainments*, and after hee had receiued the King of *Caſtile* into the *Fraternitie* of the *Garter*, and for a *Reciprocall* had his Sonne the *Prince* admitted to the *Order* of the *Golden-Fleece*, hee accompanied *King* PHILIP and his *Queene* to the *Citie* of *London*; where they were entertained with the greateſt *Magnificence* and *Triumph*, that could bee vpon no greater warning. And as ſoone as the *Earle* of *Suffolke* had beene conueyed to the *Tower* (which was the ſerious part) the *Iollities* had an end, and the Kings tooke leaue. Neuertheleſſe during their being heere, they in Subſtance concluded that *Treatie*, which the *Flemings* terme *Intercurſus malus*, and beares Date at *Windſore*; for that there bee ſome things in it, more to the Aduantage of the *Engliſh*, then of them; eſpecially, for that the *Free-fiſhing* of the *Dutch* vpon the Coaſts and Seas of *England*, granted in the *Treatie* of *Undecimo*, was not by this *Treatie* confirmed. *All Articles* that confirme former *Treaties* being preciſely and warily limited and confirmed to matter of *Commerce* onely, and not otherwiſe.

It was obſerued, that the great *Tempeſt* which draue PHILIP into *England*, blew downe the *Golden Eagle*, from the *Spire* of PAVLES, and in the fall it fell vpon a Signe of the *Blacke Eagle*, which was in PAVLES *Church-Yard*, in the

place where the *Schoole-Houſe* now ſtandeth, and battered it, and brake it downe. Which was a ſtrange *ſtooping* of a *Hawke* vpon a *Fowle*. This the People interpreted to bee an *Ominous Prognoſticke* vpon the *Imperiall Houſe*, which was (by *Interpretation* alſo) fulfilled vpon PHILIP the *Emperours* Sonne, not onely in the Preſent Diſaſter of the *Tempeſt*, but in that that followed. For PHILIP arriuing into *Spaine*, and attaining the Poſſeſſion of the *Kingdome* of *Caſtile* without reſiſtance, (inſomuch as FERDINANDO, who had ſpoke ſo great before, was with difficultie admitted to the ſpeach of his *Sonne-in-Law*) ſickened ſoone after, and deceaſed. Yet after ſuch time, as there was an *Obſeruation* by the wiſeſt of that *Court*, That if hee had liued, his *Father* would haue gained vpon him in that ſort, as hee would haue gouerned his *Counſells*, and *Deſignes*, if not his *Affections*. By this all *Spaine* returned into the power of FERDINANDO in ſtate as it was before; the rather, in regard of the infirmitie of IOAN his Daughter, who louing her Husband (by whom ſhee had many Children) dearely well, and no leſſe beloued of him (howſoeuer her *Father* to make PHILIP ill beloued of the People of *Spaine*, gaue out that PHILIP vſed her not well) was vnable in ſtrength of minde to beare the Griefe of his Deceaſe, and fell diſtracted of her *Wittes*. Of which *Maladie* her *Father* was thought no wayes to endeuour the *Cure*, the better to hold his *Regall Power* in *Caſtile*. So that as the *Felicitie* of CHARLES the Eight was ſaid to bee a *Dreame*; ſo the *Aduerſitie* of FERDINANDO was ſaid likewiſe to bee a *Dreame*, it paſſed ouer ſo ſoone.

About

About this time the King was desirous to bring into the House of LANCASTER *Celestiall Honour*, and became Suitor to *Pope* IVLIVS, to Canonize King HENRY the Sixt for a *Saint*; the rather, in respect of that his famous *Prediction* of the Kings owne Assumption to the *Crowne*. IVLIVS referred the matter (as the manner is) to certaine *Cardinalls*, to take the verification of his *Holy Acts* and *Miracles*. But it died vnder the Reference. The generall Opinion was, that *Pope* IVLIVS was too deare, and that the King would not come to his *Rates*. But it is more probable, That that *Pope* (who was extremely iealous of the Dignitie of the *Sea* of *Rome*, and of the *Acts* thereof) knowing that King HENRY the Sixth was reputed in the world abroad but for a *Simple Man*, was afraid it would but diminish the Estimation of that kind of *Honour*, if there were not a distance kept betweene *Innocents* and *Saints*.

The same yeare likewise there proceeded a *Treatie* of *Marriage* betweene the King and the *Ladie* MARGARET *Ducheſſe* Dowager of *Sauoy*, only Daugher to MAXIMILIAN, and Sister to the King of *Castile*; a *Ladie* wise, and of great good *Fame*. This Matter had beene in speach betweene the two Kings at their meeting, but was soone after resumed; and therein was imployed for his first piece the Kings then *Chaplaine*, and after the great *Prelate* THOMAS WOLSEY. It was in the end concluded, with great and ample Conditions for the King, but with promise *De Futuro* only. It may be the King was the rather induced vnto it, for that he heard more and more of the *Marriage* to goe on betweene his great *Friend* and *Allie* FERDINANDO of *Arragon*, and *Madame de* FOIS, whereby that King beganne to piece with the

French King, from whom hee had beene alwayes before ſeuered. So fatall a thing it is, for the greateſt and ſtraiteſt Amities of Kings, at one time or other to haue a little of the *Wheele*. Nay, there is a further *Tradition* (in *Spaine*, though not with vs) That the King of *Arragon*, after he knew that the *Marriage* betweene CHARLES, the young *Prince* of *Caſtile*, and MARIE the *Kings* ſecond Daughter went roundly on (Which though it was firſt mooued by the King of *Arragon*, yet it was afterwards wholly aduanced and brought to perfection by MAXIMILIAN, and the Friends on that ſide) entred into a ealouſie, that the King did aſpire to the Gouernment of *Caſtilia*, as *Adminiſtrator* during the Minoritie of his *Sonne-in-law*; as if there ſhould haue beene a Competition of *Three* for that Gouernment; FERDINANDO, *Grandfather* on the Mothers ſide; MAXIMILIAN, *Grand-father* on the Fathers ſide; and King HENRIE, *Father-in-law* to the young *Prince*. Certainely, it is not vnlike, but the Kings Gouernment (carrying the young *Prince* with him) would haue beene perhaps more welcome to the *Spaniards*, then that of the other *Two*. For the Nobilitie of *Caſtilia*, that ſo lately put out the King of *Arragon*, in fauour of King PHILIP, and had diſcouered themſelues ſo farre, could not bee but in a ſecret Diſtruſt and Diſtaſte of that King. And as for MAXIMILIAN, vpon Twentie reſpects hee could not haue beene the Man. But this purpoſe of the Kings ſeemeth to mee (conſidering the Kings ſafe Courſes, neuer found to bee enterprizing or aduenturous) not greatly probable, except hee ſhould haue had a Deſire to breathe warmer, becauſe hee had ill *Lunges*. This *Marriage* with MARGARET was protracted from time to time, in reſpect of the *Infirmitie* of the King, who now in the two and

and Twentieth of his Raigne beganne to bee troubled with the *Goute.* But the Defluxion taking alſo into his Breaſt, waſted his *Lunges*, ſo that thrice in a Yeare (in a kind of Returne, and eſpecially in the *Spring*,) hee had great Fittes and Labours of the *Tiſsicke.* Neuertheleſſe, hee continued to intend Buſineſſe with as great diligence, as before in his Health. Yet ſo, as vpon this warning, he did likewiſe now more ſeriouſly thinke of the World to come, and of making himſelfe a *Saint*, aſwell as King HENRIE the Sixth, by *Treaſure* better imployed, then to bee giuen to *Pope* IVLIVS. For this Yeare hee gaue greater *Almes* then accuſtomed, and diſcharged all *Priſoners* about the *Citie*, that lay for *Fees* or *Debts* vnder fortie ſhillings Hee did alſo make haſte with Religious *Foundations*; and in the Yeare following (which was the Three and Twentieth) finiſhed that of the *Sauoy.* And hearing alſo of the bitter *Cryes* of his *People* againſt the *Oppreſsions* of DVDLEY and EMPSON, and their Complices; partly by Deuout Perſons about him, and partly by publike *Sermons* (the *Preachers* doing their Dutie therein) Hee was touched with great Remorſe for the ſame. Neuertheleſſe, EMPSON and DVDLEY, though they could not but heare of theſe Scruples in the Kings Conſcience; yet as if the Kings *Soule* and his *Money* were in ſeuerall *Offices*, that the One was not to intermeddle with the Other, went on with as great rage as euer. For the ſame three and Twentieth Yeare was there a ſharpe Proſecution againſt *Sir* VVILLIAM CAPEL now the ſecond time; and this was for Matters of Miſgouernment in his *Maioraltie*. The great Matter beeing, that in ſome Payments hee had taken knowledge of *Falſe Moneyes*, and did not

not his diligence to examine, and beate it out, who were the Offendours. For this and ſome other things layed to his Charge, hee was condemned to pay Two Thouſand Pounds; and beeing a Man of ſtomacke, and hardened by his former Troubles, refuſed to pay a *Mite*; And bee like vſed ſome vntoward Speaches of the Proceedings, for which hee was ſent to the *Tower*, and there remayned till the Kings Death. KNESWORTH likewiſe, that had beene lately *Maior* of *London*, and both his *Sheriffes*, were for Abuſes in their Offices queſtioned, and impriſoned, and deliuered, vpon one Thouſand foure hundred pounds payd. HAWIS, an *Alderman* of *London*, was put in Trouble, and dyed with Thought, and Anguiſh, before his Buſineſſe came to an end. *Sir* LAWRENCE AILMER, who had likewiſe beene *Maior* of *London*, and his two *Sheriffes*, were put to the Fine of one Thouſand Pounds. And *Sir* LAWRENCE, for refuſing to make payment, was committed to Priſon, where hee ſtayed till EMPSON himſelfe was committed in his place.

It is no marueile (if the *Faults* were ſo light, and the *Rates* ſo heauie) that the Kings Treaſure of ſtore, that hee left at his death, moſt of it in ſecret places, vnder his owne Key and keeping, at *Richmond*, amounted (as by Tradition it is reported to haue done) vnto the Summe of neare Eighteene hundred thouſand pounds Sterling; a huge Maſſe of *Money*, euen for theſe times.

The laſt *Act* of *State* that concluded this Kings Temporall Felicitie, was the Concluſion of a Glorious *Match* betweene his Daughter MARIE, and CHARLES Prince of *Caſtile*, afterwards the great

great *Emperour*, both beeing of tender yeares. Which *Treatie* was perfected by *Biſhop* FOXE, and other his *Commiſſioners* at *Calice*, the yeare before the Kings Death. In which *Alliance*, it ſeemeth hee himſelfe tooke ſo high Contentment, as in a Letter which hee wrote thereupon to the *Citie* of *London* (commanding all poſſible demonſtrations of ioy to bee made for the ſame) hee expreſſeth himſelfe, as if hee thought hee had built a *Wall* of *Braſſe* about his Kingdome. When hee had for his *Sonnes-in-law*, a *King* of *Scotland*, and a *Prince* of *Caſtile* and *Burgundie*. So as now there was nothing to bee added to this great Kings Felicitie, beeing at the top of all worldly *Bliſſe*, (in regard of the high *Marriages* of his Children, his great *Renowne* throughout *Europe*, and his ſcarce credible *Riches*, and the perpetuall *Conſtancie* of his proſperous Succeſſes) but an opportune *Death*, to withdraw him from any future blowe of *Fortune*. Which certainely (in regard of the great *Hatred* of his *People*, and the *Title* of his *Sonne*, beeing then come to Eighteene yeares of age, and beeing a bold *Prince*, and liberall, and that gayned vpon the *People* by his very *Aſpect* and *Preſence*) had not beene impoſſible to haue come vpon him.

To crowne alſo the laſt yeare of his Raigne, as well as his firſt, hee did an *Act* of *Pietie*, rare, and worthie to bee taken into Imitation. For hee granted foorth a *Generall Pardon*, as expecting a ſecond *Coronation* in a better *Kingdome*. Hee did alſo declare in his *Will*, that his mind was, that *Reſtitution* ſhould bee made of thoſe *Summes*, which had beene vniuſtly taken by his *Officers*.

And thus this SALOMON of *England* (for SALOMON alſo was too heauie vpon his *People* in

in *Exactions*) hauing liued two and fiftie yeares, and thereof Raigned three and twentie yeares, and eight Moneths, beeing in perfect *Memorie*, and in a moſt Bleſſed *Mind*, in a great *Calme* of a *Conſuming Sickneſſe* paſſed to a better World, the two and twentieth of *Aprill*, 1508. at his *Palace* of *Richmond*, which himſelfe had built.

This

THis King (*to ſpeake of him in Tearmes equall to his Deſeruing*) *was one of the beſt ſort of* Wonders; *a* Wonder *for* Wiſemen. *He had Parts* (*both in his* Vertues, *and his* Fortune) *not ſo fit for a* Common-place, *as for* Obſeruation. *Certainely hee was* Religious, *both in his* Affection, *and* Obſeruance. *But as hee could ſee cleare* (*for thoſe times* (*through* Superſtition, *ſo he would be blinded* (*now and then*) *by Humane* Policie. *Hee aduanced* Church-men; *hee was tender in the Priuiledge of* Sanctuaries, *though they wrought him much miſchiefe. Hee built and endowed many* Religious Foundations, *beſides his* Memorable Hoſpitall *of the* Sauoy. *And yet was hee a great* Almes-giuer *in ſecret; which ſhewed, that his* Workes in publique *were dedicated rather to* GODS Glorie, *then his Owne. Hee profeſſed alwayes to loue and ſeeke* Peace; *and it was his vſuall* Preface *in his* Treaties; That when CHRIST came into the *World*, *Peace* was ſung; and when HEE went out of the *World*, *Peace* was bequeathed. *And this* Vertue *could not proceede out of* Feare, *or* Softneſſe; *for hee was* Valiant *and* Actiue, *and therefore* (*no doubt*) *it was truely* Chriſtian *and* Morall. *Yet hee knew the way to* Peace, *was not to ſeeme*

to bee deſirous to auoide Warres. *Therefore would he make* Offers, *and* Fames *of* Warres, *till hee had mended the* Conditions *of* Peace. *It was alſo much, that one that was ſo great a Louer of* Peace, *ſhould be ſo happy in* Warre. *For his* Armes (*either in* Forraine *or* Ciuill Warres) *were neuer* Infortunate, *neither did he know what a* Diſaſter *meant. The* Warre *of his* Comming in, *and the* Rebellions *of the* Earle *of* Lincolne, *and the* Lord AWDLEY *were ended by* Victorie. *The* Warres *of* France *and* Scotland, *by* Peaces *ſought at his hands. That of* Brittaine, *by accident of the* Dukes *death. The* Inſurrection *of the* Lord LOVEL, *and that of* PERKIN *at* Exceſter, *and in* Kent, *by flight of the* Rebells, *before they came to* Blowes. *So that his* Fortune *of* Armes *was ſtill* Inviolate. *The rather ſure, for that in the quenching of the* Commotions *of his* Subiects, *hee euer went in* Perſon. *Sometimes reſeruing himſelfe to backe and ſecond his* Lieutenants, *but euer in* Action; *and yet that was not meerly* Forwardneſſe, *but partly* Diſtruſt *of others.*

Hee did much maintaine and countenance his Lawes. *Which (neuertheleſſe) was no* Impediment *to him to worke his* Will. *For it was ſo handled, that neither* Prerogatiue, *nor*

Pro-

Profit *went to* Diminution. *And yet as hee would ſometimes ſtraine vp his* Lawes *to his* Prerogatiue, *ſo would hee alſo let downe his* Prerogatiue *to his Parliament. For* Minte, *and* VVarres, *and* Marſhall Diſcipline, (*things of Abſolute Power*) *he would neuertheleſſe bring to* Parliament. Iuſtice *was well adminiſtred in his time, ſaue where the King was* Partie: *Saue alſo, that the* Counſell-Table *intermedled too much with* Meum *and* Tuum. *For it was a very* Court *of* Iuſtice *during his time, eſpecially in the Beginning. But in that part both of* Iuſtice *and* Policie *which is the Durable Part, and cut (as it were) in Braſſe or Marble (which is* The making of good Lawes) *hee did excell. And with his* Iuſtice, *hee was alſo a* Mercifull Prince. *As in whoſe time, there were but three of the* Nobilitie *that ſuffered; the* Earle *of* VVarwicke, *the Lord* Chamberlaine, *and the Lord* AWDLEY. *Though the firſt two were in ſtead of* Numbers, *in the Diſlike and Obloquie of the* People. *But there were neuer ſo great* Rebellions, *expiated with ſo little* Bloud, *drawne by the hand of Iuſtice, as the two* Rebellions *of* Black-heath *and* Exceſter. *As for the* Seueritie *vſed vpon thoſe which were taken in* Kent, *it was but vpon a* Scumme *of*

People. His Pardons *went euer both before, and after his* Sword. *But then he had withall a ſtrange kind of* Interchanging *of large and inexpected* Pardons, *which ſeuere* Executions. *Which (his Wiſedome conſidered) could not bee imputed to any* Inconſtancie, *or* Inequalitie; *but either to ſome* Reaſon *which we do not now know, or to a* Principle *he had ſet vnto himſelfe,* That hee would vary, and trie both wayes in turne. *But the leſſe* Bloud *hee drew, the more hee tooke of* Treaſure. *And (as ſome conſtrued it) hee was the more ſparing in the* One, *that hee might bee the more preſſing in the* Other; *for both would haue beene intollerable. Of* Nature *aſſuredly hee coueted to accumulate* Treaſure, *and was a little* Poore *in admiring* Riches. *The* People (*into whom there is infuſed, for the preſeruation of* Monarchies, *a naturall Deſire to diſcharge their* Princes, *though it bee with the vniuſt charge of their* Counſellors *and* Miniſters) *did impute this vnto* Cardinall MORTON, *and Sir* REGINOLD BRAY. *Who (as it after appeared) as* Counſellors *of ancient Authoritie with him, did ſo ſecond his* Humours, *as neuertheleſſe they did temper them. Whereas* EMPSON, *and* DVDLEY *that followed, beeing Perſons that had no* Reputation *with him (other-*

therwiſe then by the ſeruile following of his Bent) did not giue way onely (as the firſt did) but ſhape him way to thoſe Extremities, for which himſelfe was touched with remorſe at his Death, and which his Succeſſor renounced, and ſought to purge. This Exceſſe of his, had at that time many Gloſſes and Interpretations. Some thought the continuall Rebellions wherewith hee had beene vexed, had made him grow to hate his People. Some thought it was done to pull downe their Stomacks, and to keepe them low. Some, for that hee would leaue his Sonne a Golden-fleece. Some ſuſpected he had ſome high Deſigne vpon Forraine Parts. But thoſe perhaps ſhall come neareſt the truth, that fetch not their reaſons ſo farre of; but rather impute it to Nature, Age, Peace, and a Mind fixed vpon no other Ambition or Purſuit. Whereunto I ſhould adde, that hauing euery day Occaſion to take notice of the Neceſsities and Shifts for Monie of other great Princes abroad, it did the better (by Compariſon) ſet of to him the Felicitie of full Cofers. As to his expending of Treaſure, hee neuer ſpared Charge which his Affaires required; and in his Buildings was Magnificent, but his Rewards were very limitted. So that his Liberalitie was rather vpon his owne State and Memorie, then vpon the Deſerts of others. Hee

Hee was of an High Mind, *and loued his owne* VVill, *and his owne* VVay; *as One that reuered himſelfe, and would* Raigne *indeed. Had hee beene a* Priuate-man, *hee would haue beene termed* Proud. *But in a Wiſe* Prince, *it was but keeping of* Diſtance, *which indeed hee did towards all; not admitting any neare or full* Approach, *neither to his* Power *or to his* Secrets. *For hee was gouerned by none. His* Queene (*notwithſtanding ſhee had preſented him with diuers* Children, *and with a* Crowne *alſo, (though hee would not acknowledge it) could doe nothing with him. His* Mother *hee reuerenced much, heard little. For any* Perſon *agreeable to him for* Societie (*ſuch as was* HASTINGS *to King* EDWARD *the Fourth, or* CHARLES BRANDON *after to King* HENRY *the Eight*) *hee had none: Except wee ſhould account for ſuch Perſons,* FOXE, *and* BRAY, *and* EMPSON, *becauſe they were ſo much with him. But it was but as the* Inſtrument *is much with the* Workeman. *Hee had nothing in him of* Vaine-glorie, *but yet kept* State *and* Maieſtie *to the height; Beeing ſenſible, That* Maieſtie *maketh the People bow, but* Vaine-glorie *boweth to them.*

To his Confederates *abroad he was* Conſtant

ſtant and Iuſt, but not Open. But rather ſuch was his Inquirie, and ſuch his Cloſeneſſe; as they ſtood in the Light towards him, and hee ſtood in the Darke to them. Yet without Strangeneſſe, but with a ſemblance of mutuall Communication of Affaires. As for little Enuies, or Emulations vpon Forraine Princes (which are frequent with many Kings) hee had neuer any; but went ſubſtantially to his owne Buſineſſe. Certaine it is, that though his Reputation was great at home, yet it was greater abroad. For Forrainers that could not ſee the Paſſages of Affaires, but made their Iudgements vpon the Iſſues of them, noted that hee was euer in Strife, and euer a Loſt. It grew alſo from the Aires, which the Princes and States abroad receiued from their Ambaſſadors and Agents here; which were attending the Court in great number. Whom hee did not onely content with Curteſie, Reward, and Priuateneſſe; but (vpon ſuch Conferences as paſſed with them) put them in Admiration, to finde his Vniuerſall Inſight into the Affaires of the World. Which though hee did ſucke chiefely; from themſelues; yet that which hee had gathered from them all, ſeemed Admirable to euery one. So that they did write euer to their Superiours in high termes, concerning

cerning his Wiſedome and Art of Rule. Nay, when they were returned, they did commonly maintaine Intelligence with him. Such a Dexteritie hee had to impropriate to himſelfe all Forraine Inſtruments.

Hee was carefull and liberall to obtaine good Intelligence from all parts abroad. Wherein hee did not onely uſe his Intereſt in the Leigers here, and his Penſioners which hee had both in the Court of Rome, and other the Courts of Chriſtendome; but the Induſtrie and Vigilancie of his owne Ambaſſadors in Forraine parts. For which purpoſe, his Inſtructions were euer Extreame, Curious, and Articulate, and in them more Articles touching Inquiſition, then touching Negotiation. Requiring likewiſe from his Ambaſſadors an Anſwere, in particular diſtinct Articles, reſpectiuely to his Queſtions.

As for his ſecret Spialls, which hee did imploy both at home and abroad, by them to diſcouer what Practiſes and Conſpiracies were againſt him, ſurely his Caſe required it: Hee had ſuch Moles perpetually working and caſting to vndermine him. Neither can it bee reprehended. For if Spialls bee lawfull againſt lawfull Enemies, much more againſt Conſpirators, and Traitors. But indeed to giue them Cre-

Credence *by* Othes *or* Curſes, *that cannot bee well maintained; For thoſe are too holy* Veſtments *for a* Diſguiſe. *Yet ſurely there was (is further* Good *in his employing of theſe* Flies *and* Familiars; *That as the vſe of them was cauſe that many* Conſpiracies *were reuealed, ſo the* Fame *and* Suſpition *of them kept (no doubt) many* Conſpiracies *from beeing attempted.*

Towards his Queene *hee was nothing* Vxorious, *nor ſcarce* Indulgent; *but* Companiable, *and* Reſpectiue, *and without* Iealouſie. *Towards his* Children *hee was full of* Paternall Affection, *Carefull of their* Education, *aſpiring to their* High Aduancement, *regular to ſee that they ſhould not want of any due* Honour *and* Reſpect, *but not greatly willing to caſt any* Popular Luſtre *vpon them.*

To his Councell *hee did referre much, and ſate oft in Perſon; knowing it to bee the Way to aſsiſt his* Power, *and informe his* Iudgement. *In which reſpect alſo hee was fairely patient of* Libertie, *both of* Aduiſe, *and of* Vote, *till himſelfe were declared. Hee kept a ſtrait hand on his* Nobilitie, *and choſe rather to aduance* Clergie-men *and* Lawyers, *which were more* Obſequious *to him, but had*

leſſe Intereſt in the People; which made for his Abſoluteneſſe, but not for his Safetie. In ſo much as (I am perſwaded) it was one of the Cauſes of his troubleſome Raigne; for that his Nobles, though they were Loyall and Obedient, yet did not Co-operate with him, but let euery man goe his owne Way. Hee was not afraid of an Able Man, as LEWIS the Eleuenth was. But contrariwiſe, hee was ſerued by the Ableſt Men that were to bee found; without which his Affaires could not haue proſpered as they did. For WARRE, BEDFORD, OXFORD, SVRREY, DAWBENEY, BROOKE, POYNINGS. For other Affaires, MORTON, FOXE, BRAY, the Prior of Lanthony, WARHAM, VRSWICKE, HVSSEY, FROWICKE, and others. Neither did hee care how Cunning they were, that hee did imploy; For hee thought himſelfe to haue the Maſter-Reach. And as hee choſe well, ſo hee held them vp well. For it is a ſtrange thing, that though hee were a Darke Prince, and infinitely Suſpitious, and his Times full of Secret Conſpiracies and Troubles; yet in Twentie foure yeares Raigne, hee neuer put downe, or diſcompoſed Counſellor, or neare Seruant, ſaue onely STANLEY, the Lord Chamberlaine.

As

As for the Diſpoſition *of his* Subiects *in Generall towards him, it ſtood thus with him; That of the* Three Affections, *which naturally tie the hearts of the* Subiects *to their* Soueraignes, Loue, Feare, *and* Reuerence; *hee had the* laſt *in height, the* ſecond *in good meaſure, and ſo little of the* firſt, *as hee was beholding to the other* Two.

Hee was a Prince, Sad, Serious, *and full of* Thoughts, *and ſecret* Obſeruations, *and full of* Notes *and* Memorialls *of his owne hand, eſpecially touching* Perſons. *As, whom to Employ, whom to Reward, whom to Enquire of, whom to Beware of, what were the* Dependencies, *what were the* Factions, *and the like; keeping (as it were) a* Iournall *of his* Thoughts. *There is to this day a merrie* Tale; *That his* Monkie (*ſet on as it was thought by one of his Chamber*) *tore his Principall* Note-Booke *all to pieces, when by chance it lay forth. Whereat the* Court (*which liked not thoſe Penſiue* Accompts) *was almoſt tickled with ſport.*

Hee was indeed full of Apprehenſions *and* Suſpitions. *But as hee did eaſily take them, ſo hee did eaſily checke them, and maſter them: whereby they were not dangerous, but troubled himſelfe more then others. It is true, his* Thoughts *were ſo many, as they could not well*

alwayes ſtand together; but that which did good one way, did hurt another. Neither did hee at ſome times waigh them aright in their proportions. Certainely, that Rumour which did him ſo much miſchiefe (That the Duke of Yorke ſhould bee ſaued, and aliue) was (at the firſt) of his owne nouriſhing; becauſe hee would haue more Reaſon not to raigne in the Right of his Wife. Hee was Affable, and both Well and Faire-ſpoken; and would vſe ſtrange Sweetneſſe and Blandiſhments of Words, where hee deſired to effect or perſwade any thing that hee tooke to heart. Hee was rather Studious, then Learned; reading moſt Bookes that were of any worth, in the French-tongue. Yet hee vnderſtood the Latine, as appeareth in that Cardinall HADRIAN, and others, who could very well haue written French, did vſe to write to him in Latine.

For his Pleaſures, there is no Newes of them. And yet by his Inſtructions to MARSIN, and STILE, touching the Queene of Naples, it ſeemeth hee could Interrogate well touching Beautie. Hee did by Pleaſures, as great Princes doe by Banquets, come and looke a little vpon them, and turne away. For neuer Prince was more wholly giuen to his Affaires, nor in them more of himſelfe; In ſo much, as

in

in Triumphs *of* Iuſts, *and* Tourneys, *and* Balles, *and* Maſques (*which they then called* Diſguiſes) *hee was rather a* Princely *and Gentle* Spectator, *then ſeemed much to bee delighted.*

No doubt, in him as in all men (and moſt of all in Kings) *his* Fortune *wrought vpon his* Nature, *and his* Nature *vpon his* Fortune. *Hee attayned to the* Crowne, *not onely from a priuate* Fortune, *which might indow him with* Moderation; *but alſo from the* Fortune *of an* Exiled Man, *which had quickned in him all* Seedes *of* Obſeruation *and* Induſtrie. *And his* Times *being rather* Proſperous, *then* Calme, *had raiſed his* Confidence *by* Succeſſe, *but almoſt marred his* Nature *by* Troubles. *His* Wiſdome, *by often* euading *from* Perils, *was turned rather into a* Dexteritie *to deliuer himſelfe from* Dangers, *when they preſſed him, then into a* Prouidence *to preuent and remooue them afarre of. And euen in* Nature, *the* Sight *of his* Minde *was like ſome* Sights *of* Eyes; *rather ſtrong at hand, then to carrie a farre of. For his* Witt *increaſed vpon the* Occaſion; *and ſo much the more, if the* Occaſion *were ſharpened by* Danger. *Againe, whether it were the ſhortneſſe of his* Fore-ſight, *or the ſtrength of his* Will, *or the dazeling*

of

of his Suſpitions, or what it was; Certaine it is, that the perpetuall Troubles of his Fortunes (there being no more matter out of which they grew) could not haue beene without ſome great Defects, and mayne Errours in his Nature, Cuſtomes, and Proceedings, which he had enough to doe to ſaue and helpe, with a thouſand little Induſtries and Watches. But thoſe doe beſt appeare in the Storie it ſelfe. Yet take him with all his Defects, if a Man ſhould compare him with the Kings his Concurrents, in France and Spaine, he ſhall find him more Politique then LEWIS the twelfth of France, and more Entire and Sincere then FERDINANDO of Spaine. But if you ſhall change LEWIS the twelfth, for LEWIS the Eleuenth, who liued a little before; then the Conſort is more perfect. For that LEWIS the Eleuenth, FERDINANDO, and HENRY, may bee eſteemed for the Tres Magi of Kings of thoſe Ages. To conclude, If this King did no greater Matters, it was long of himſelfe; for what he minded, he compaſſed.

Hee was a Comely Perſonage, a little aboue Iuſt Stature, well and ſtraight limmed, but ſlender. His Countenance was Reuerend, and a little like a Church-man: And as it was not ſtrange or darke, ſo neyther was it win-

VVinning *or* Pleaſing, *but as the* Face *of one well diſpoſed. But it was to the Diſaduantage of the* Painter; *for it was beſt when hee ſpake.*

His VVorth *may beare a* Tale *or two, that may put vpon him ſomewhat that may ſeeme* Diuine. *When the* Ladie MARGARET *his* Mother *had diuers great* Sutors *for* Marriage, *ſhe dreamed one Night,* That one in the likeneſſe of a Biſhop in Pontificall habit, did tender her EDMVND Earle of Richmond (the Kings Father) for her Husband. *Neither had ſhe euer any* Child *but the* King, *though ſhe had three* Husbands. *One day when* King HENRY *the Sixth (whoſe* Innocencie *gaue him* Holines) *was waſhing his hands at a great* Feaſt, *and caſt his* Eye *vpon* King HENRY, *then a young* Youth, *he ſaid;* This is the Lad, that ſhall poſſeſſe quietly that, that we now ſtriue for. *But that that was truely* Diuine *in him, was that he had the* Fortune *of a* True Chriſtian, *aſwell as of a* Great King, *in liuing* Exerciſed, *and dying* Repentant. *So as hee had an happie* VVarrefare *in both* Conflicts, *both of* Sinne, *and the* Croſſe.

Hee was borne at Pembrooke Caſtle, *and lyeth buried at* VVeſtminſter, *in one of the Statelyeſt and Daintieſt Monuments*

of

of Europe, *both for the* Chappell, *and for the* Sepulcher. *So that hee dwelleth more richly* Dead, *in the* Monument *of his* Tombe, *then hee did* Aliue *in* Richmond, *or any of his* Palaces. *I could wiſh he did the like, in this* Monument *of his* Fame.

FINIS.

Faults eſcaped.

Page. 59. lin. 15. *read*, The nature of the times. Pag. 80. lin. 34. *read*, was not cleare on either ſide. Pag. 90. lin. 20. *read*, reſolued to make his profit. Pag. 101. lin. 7. *read*, couched, *for* touched. Pag. 122. lin. 6. *read*, If they found. Pag. 139. lin. 26. *read*, and to make demonſtration. Pag. 184. lin. 17. *read*, which ſhee enioyed.